PAMELA;

OR,

VIRTUE Rewarded.

In a SERIES of

FAMILIAR LETTERS

FROM A

Reautiful Young DAMSEL,

To her PARENTS

PUBLISHED

In order to cultivate the Principles of VIRTUE and RELIGION in the Minds of the YOUTH of BOTH SEXES.

A NARRATIVE which has its Foundation in TRUTH, and at the same time that it agreeably entertains, by a Variety of various and affecting INCIDENTS, is entirely divested of all those Images, which in too many Pieces calculated for Amusement only, tend to inflame the Minds they should instruct.

In FOUR VOLUMES.

The TENTH EDITION.

To which are prefixed, Extracts from feveral curious LETTERS written to the Editor on the Subject.

VOL. I.

LONDON:

Printed for W. STRAHAN, J. and F. RIVINGTON, W. Johnston, T. Caslon, S. Crowder, B. Law, W. and J. Richardson, S. Bladon, R. Baldwin, T. Davies, T. Becket, and B. Collins.

M.DCC.LXXI.

THUS WA n'u p Rewarded. to ABIMTE e.at The American Janes Man Campy follows distant has been promised as a skinding to the form Hard Of Talk orb NAME OF BUILDING The state of the s Milliany European wo the langer and the adding the add the Roll of the State of the state of wanter warning gring parties of DESIGNATION OF THE PROPERTY OF marazania h b s d cananani in ai treis West Toman and the Late of the Contraction A CHARLEST CONTRACT OF THE STATE OF THE STAT habital all the trop of the control of the face



REFA

B Y THE ENGINEER, Deliver.

OR. it you below of Palligne love to talk



F to Divert and Entertain, and, at the same time, to Instruct, and Improve the Minds of the YouTH

by the Virgin, rot Bride c

thore the evaluelt

of both Sexes: Des Livility for sate is becouldn't

If to inculcate Religion and Morality in so easy and agreeable a Manner, as shall render them equally delightful and profitable:

If to fet forth, in the most exemplany Lights, the Parental, the Filial, and the Social Duties :

A 2

If to paint VICE in its proper Colours, to make it deservedly odious; and to set VIRTUE in its own amiable Light, to make it Lovely:

If to draw Characters with Justness, and to support them Distinctly:

If to raise a Distress from natural Causes, and excite Compassion from just ones:

If to teach the Man of Fortune, how to use it; the Man of Passion, how to subdue it; and the Man of Intrigue, how gracefully, and with Honour to himself, to reclaim:

If to give practical Examples, worthy to be followed in the most critical and affecting Cases, by the Virgin, the Bride, and the Wife:

If to effect all these good Ends, without raising a single Idea throughout the Whole, that shall shock the exactest Purity, even in the warmest of those Instances where Purity would be most apprehensive:

If these be laudable Recommendations, the Editor of the following Letters, which have their Foundation in Truth, ventures to affert that all these Ends are obtained here; and writes with the more Assurance of Success, as an Editor may be allowed to judge with more Impartiality than is often to be found in an Author.



the between and the will test for and the formal and the

thefolia estated Sandhar. The greatest Regard is

title the total have; not and of palacies

a ta nbemomentum per mele dia dipina Vicentina dia 1933. Per sentia dia per industria dia 1938 il sentia di mandele se di dia 1933. Il sentia di mandele di per di dia

iger on a to say a new testing

decreased a committee being being

Thus export and the the other out of the

STEER STEERS

To the Editor of the Piece intituled, PAMELA; or VIRTUE Rewarded.

Dear SIR,

THAVE had inexpressible Pleasure in the Perusal of your PAMELA. It entirely answers the Character you give of it in your Preface; nor have you faid one Word too much in Commendation of a Piece that has Advantages and Excellencies peculiar to itself. For, besides the beautiful Simplicity of the Stile, and a happy Propriety and Clearness of Expression (the Letters being written under the immediate Impression of every Circumstance which occasioned them, and that to those who had a Right to know the fair Writer's most secret Thoughts) the several Passions of the Mind must, of course, be more affectingly described, and Nature may be traced in her undifguised Inclinations with much more Propriety and Exactness than can possibly be found in a Detail of Actions long past, which are never recolleded with the same Affections, Hopes, and Dreads, with which they were felt when they occured.

This little Book will infallibly be looked upon as the hitherto much-wanted Standard or Pattern for this Kind of Writing: For it abounds with lively Images and Pictures; with Incidents natural, surprising and perfectly adapted to the Story; with Circumstances interesting to Persons in common Life, as well as to those in exalted Stations. The greatest Regard is

every-

every-where paid in it to Decency, and to every Duty of Life: There is a constant Fitness of the Stile to the Persons and Characters described; Pleasure and Instruction here always go hand-in-hand; Vice and Virtue are set in constant Opposition, and Religion every-where inculcated in its native Beauty. and chearful Amiableness; not dressed up in stiff, melancholy, or gloomy Forms, on one hand; nor yet, on the other, debased below its due Dignity, and noble Requisites, in compliment to a too fashionable, but depraved Tafte. And this I will boldly fay, that if its numerous Beauties are added to its excellent Tendency, it will be found worthy a Place, not only in all Families (especially such as have in them young Persons of either Sex) but in the Collections of the most curious and polite Readers. For as it borrows none of its Excellencies from the romantic Flights of unnatural Fancy, its being founded in Truth and Nature, and built upon Experience, will be a lasting Recommendation to the Discerning and Judicious; while the agreeable Variety of Occurrences and Characters, in which it abounds, will not fail to engage the Attention of the gay and more sprightly Readers.

The moral Reflections and Uses to be drawn from the several Parts of this admirable History, are so happily deduced from a Croud of different Events and Characters, in the Conclusion of the Work, that I shall say the less on that Head. But, I think, the Hints you have given me, should also prefatorily be given to the Public; viz. That it will appear from several Things mentioned in the Letters, that the Story must have happen'd within these thirty Years past: That you have been obliged to vary some of the Names of Persons, Places, &c. and to disguise a few of the Circumstances, in order to avoid giving Offence to some Persons, who would not chuse to be

viii To the Editor of PAMELA.

pointed out too plainly in it; tho' they would be glad it may do the Good so laudably intended by the Publication. And as you have in confidence submitted to my Opinion some of those Variations, I am much pleased, that you have so managed the Matter, as to make no Alteration in the Facts; and, at the same time, have avoided the digressive Prolixity too frequently made use of on such Occasions.

Little Book, Charming PAMELA! face the World, and never doubt of finding Friends and Admirers, not only in thine own Country, but far from Home. The reigning Depravity of the Times has yet left Virtue many Votaries. Of their Protection you need not despair. May every headstrong Libertine, whose Hands you reach, be reclaimed; and every tempted Virgin who reads you, imitate the Virtue, and meet the Reward, of the high-meriting, tho low-descended Pamela! I am, Sir,

Story touch power houseast resident these entended traces

[2] I had you have been configuration and several configurations

[3] We won of Persons Process and the several configuration of the configuration and the configuration of the

Your most Obedient,

And faithful Servant,

sin and of oder of nation

J. B. D. F.

KYRAKU E E KARKEKE

etiennesia lexibel et menten in station de

hi in loud from mechanisment chan your

and the second of the second of the second

To my worthy Friend the Editor of PAMELA.

at S I R, and the walker before his

Rachard in the way, caucifered Return the Manuscript of Pamela by the Bearer, which I have read with a great deal of Pleasure. It is written with that Spirit of Truth, and agreeable Simplicity, which, tho' much wanted, is feldom found in those Pieces which are calculated for the Entertainment and Instruction of the Public. It carries Conviction in every Part of it; and the Incidents are so natural and interesting, that I have gone hand-in-hand, and fympathiz'd with the pretty Heroine in all her Sufferings, and been extremely anxious for her Safety, under the Apprehensions of the bad Consequences which I expected, every Page, would ensue from the laudable Resistance she made. I have interested myself in all her Schemes of Escape; been alternately pleas'd and angry with her in-her Restraint; pleas'd with the little Machinations and Contrivances she set on foot for her Release, and angry for fuffering her Fear to defeat them; always lamenting, with a most sensible Concern, the Miscarriages of her Hopes and Projects. In short, the Whole is fo affecting, that there is no reading it without uncommon Concern and Emotion. Thus far only as to the Entertainment it gives.

As to Instruction and Morality, the Piece is full of both. It shews Virtue in the strongest Light, and renders the Practice of it amiable and lovely.

Vol. 1.

The beautiful Sufferer keeps it ever in her View, without the least-Ostentation or Pride; she has it fo strongly implanted in her, that thro' the whole Course of her Sufferings she does not so much as hesitate once, whether she shall facrifice it to Liberty and Ambition, or not; but, as if there were no other Way to free and fave herfelf, carries on a determin'd Purpose to persevere in her Innocence. and wade with it throughout all Difficulties and Temptations, or perish under them. It is surprising, and exemplary, that a young Person, so circumstanc'd as she was, could, in contempt of proffer'd Grandeur on the one fide, and in defiance of Penury on the other, so happily and prudently conduct herself thro' such a Series of Perplexities and Troubles, and withstand the alluring Baits and Offers of a fine Gentleman, fo generally admir'd and efteem'd. for the Agreeableness of his Person and his good Qualities, defeat all his Measures with so much Address, and oblige him, at last, to give over his Purfuit, and facrifice his Pride and Ambiton to Virtue, and become the Protector of that Innocence which he fo long and fo indefatigably labour'd to supplant: And all this without ever having entertain'd the least previous Design or Thought for that Purpose: No Art used to inflame him; no Coquetry practised to tempt or entice him; and no Prudery or Affectation to tamper with his Passions; but, on the contrary, artless and unpractifed in the Wiles of the World, all her Endeavours, and even all her Wishes, tended only to render herself as unamiable as she could in his Eyes: Tho' at the same time she is so far from having any Aversion to his Person, that she seems rather prepoffes'd in his Favour, and admires his Excellencies, while she condemns his Passion for her. A glorious Instance of Self-denial: Thus her very Repulses became Attractions: The more the refisted, the

the more she charm'd; and the very Means she used to guard her Virtue, the more endanger'd it, by inflaming his Passions: 'Till, at last, by Perseverance, and a resolute Desence, the Besieged not only obtained a glorious Victory over the Besieger, but took him Prisoner too.

I am charm'd with the beautiful Reflections she makes in the Course of her Distresses; her Soliloquies, and little Reasonings with hersels, are exceeding pretty and entertaining: She pours out all her Soul in them before her Parents without Disguise; so that one may judge of, nay, almost see, the inmost Recesses of her Mind. A pure, clear Fountain of Truth and Innocence; a Magazine of Virtue, and

unblemish'd Thoughts!

d

I can't conceive why you should hesitate a Moment as to the Publication of this very natural and uncommon Piece. I could wish to see it out in its own native Simplicity, which will affect and please the Reader beyond all the Strokes of Oratory in the World; for those will but spoil it: And should you permit fuch a murdering Hand to be laid upon it, to gloss and tinge it over with superfluous and needless Decorations, which, like too much Drapery in Sculpture and Statuary, will but encumber it, it may difguisethe Facts, mar the Reflections, and unnaturalize the Incidents, so as to be lost in a Multiplicity of tine idle Words and Phrases, and reduce our Sterling Substance into an Empty Shadow, or rather frenchify our English Solidity into Froth and Whip-syllabub. No; let us have Pamela as Pamela wrote it; in her own Words, without Amputation or Addition. Produce her to us in her neat Country-Apparel, fuch as the appear'd in, on her intended Departure to her Parents; for such best becomes her Innocence, and beautiful Simplicity. Such a Dress will best edify and entertain. The flowing Robes of Oratory may indeed indeed amuse and amaze, but will never strike the Mind with solid Attention.

In short, Sir, a Piece of this Kind is much wanted in the World, which is too much, as well as too early, debauched by pernicious Novels. I know nothing entertaining of that Kind, that one might venture to recommend to the Perusal (muchless, the Imitation) of the Youth of either Sex: All that I have hitherto read, tends only to corrupt their Principles, mislead their Judgments, and initiate them

into Gallanty, and loofe Pleafures.

Publish then this good, this edifying and instructive little Piece for their sakes. The Honour of Pamela's Sex demands Pamela at your Hands, to shew the World an Heroine, almost beyond Example, in an unusual Scene of Life, whom no Temptations or Sufferings could subdue. It is a fine and glorious Original, for the Fair to copy out and imitate. Our own Sex, too, require it of you, to free us, in some measure, from the Imputation of being incapable of

the Impressions of Virtue and Honour.

ATTENDED TO THE STATE OF THE STATE OF

bobni

In short, the Cause of Virtue calls for the Publication of such a Piece as this. Oblige then, Sir, the concurrent Voices of both Sexes, and give us Pamela for the Benefit of Mankind: It will form the tender Minds of Youth for the Reception and Practice of Virtue and Honour; confirm and establish those of maturer Years on good and steady Principles: reclaim the Vicious, and mend the Age in general; infomuch, that as I doubt not Pamela will become the bright Example and Imitation of all the sashionable young Ladies of Great-Britain; so the truly generous Benefactor and Rewarder of her exemplary Virtue will be no less admired and imitated among the Beau Monde of our own Sex. I am,

Your affectionate Friend, &c.



INTRODUCTION

TO THE Each Mod sale

PRESENT EDITION.



HE kind Reception which this Piece has met with from the Public, deferues not only Acknowledgment, but that some Notice should be taken of Objections that have come to hand against it.

But Difficulties having arisen from different Opinions, some applauding the very Things that others found fault with, we have thought it necessary to insert the Praises in the following Letters, with the critical Remarks; because the Writer has so kindly mix'd them, that they cannot be disjoin'd (however earnefly the Author of the Piece defir'd it) without obscuring, and, indeed, defacing, all the Spirit of the Reasoning.

To the Editor of PAMELA.

dr to complete the state of the

Dear Sir,

VOU have agreeably deceiv'd me into a Surprize, which it will be as hard to express, as the Beauties of PAMELA. Though I open'd this powerful little Piece with more Expectation than from common Defigns, of like Promise, because it came from your Hands, for my Daughters; yet, who could have dreamt,

dreamt, he should find, under the modest Disguise of a Novel, all the Soul of Religion, Good-breeding, Difcretion, Good-nature, Wit, Fancy, Fine Thought and Morality?—I have done nothing but read it to others, and hear others again read it to me, ever fince it came into my Hands; and I find I am likely to do nothing elfe, for I know not how long yet to come: Because, if I lay the Book down, it comes after me.—When it has dwelt all Day long upon the Ear, it takes Poffession all Night of the Fancy.—It has Witchcrast in every Poge of it; but it is the Witchcraft of Passion and Meaning. Who is there that will not despise the false, empty Pomp of the Poets, when he observes in this little unpretending, mild Triumph of Nature, the whole Force of Invention and Genius, creating new Powers of Emotion, and transplanting Ideas of Pleasure into that unweeded low Garden the Heart, from the dry and sharp

Summit of Reason.

YET, I confess, there is One in the World, of whom, I think with still greater Respect, than of

PAMELA; and That is, of the AUTHOR of PAMELA.—Pray, who is he, Dear Sir? and where, and how has he been able to hide, hitherto, fuch an incircling and all-mastering Spirit? He possesses every Quality that ART could have charm'd by; yet has lent it to, and conceal'd it in, NATURE. - The Comprehensiveness of his Imagination must be truly prodigious !- It has stretched out this diminutive mere Grain of Mustard-seed (a poor Girl's little, innocent Story) into a Resemblance of that Heaven, which the Best of Good Books has compar'd it to.—All the Passions are His, in their most close and abstracted Recesses; and by selecting the most delicate, and yet, at the same time, most powerful, of the Springs, thereby to act, wind, and manage, the Heart, He nerves us, every-where, with the Force of a TRAGEDY.

WHAT

WHAT is there, throughout the Whole, that I do not fincerely admire !- I admire, in it, the strong distinguishing Variety, and picturesque glowing Likeness to Life, of the Characters. Iknow, hear, fee, and live among 'em All; and, if I cou'd paint, could return you their Faces. I admire, in it, the noble Simplicity, Force, Aptness, and Truth, of so many modest, economical, moral, prudential, religious, fatirical, and cautionary Lessons; which are introduced with such seasonable Dexterity, and with fo polish'd and exquisite a Delicacy of Expression and Sentiment, that I am only apprehensive for the Interests of Virtue, lest some of the finest, and most touching, of those elegant Strokes of Good-breeding, Generofity, and Reflection, should be lost, under the too gross Discernment of an unseeling Majority of Readers; of whose Coarseness, however, they were kindly defigned, as the most useful and charitable Correctives,

ONE of the best-judg'd Peculiars of the Plan, is, that These Instructions being convey'd, as in a kind of Dramatical Representation, by those beautiful Scenes, Her own Letters and Journals, who acts the most moving and suffering Part, we seel the Force in a threefold Effect,—from the Motive, the Act,

and the Confequence.

BUT what, above All, I am charm'd with, is the amiable Good-nature of the AUTHOR; who must, I am convinc'd, have one of the best, and most generous Hearts of Mankind: Because, mis-measuring other Minds, by His own, he can draw Every-thing, to Perfection, but Wickedness.—I became inextricably in love with this delightful Desect of his Malice;—for, I found it owing to an Excess in his Honesty. Only observe, Sir, with what virtuous Relustance, he complies with the Demands of his Story, when he stands in need of some blame-

able Characters. Tho' his Judgment compels him to mark 'em with difagreeable Colourings, so that they make an odious Appearance at first, He can't forbear, by an unexpected and gradual Decline from Themselves, to soften and transmute all the Horror conceiv'd for their Baseness, till we are arriv'd, thro' insensible Stages, at an Inclination to forgive it

entirely.

oldin

I MUST venture to add, without mincing the Matter, what I really believe, of this Book.—It will live on, through Posterity, with such unbounded Extent of good Confequences, that Twenty Ages to come may be the Better and Wifer, for its Influence. It will steal first, imperceptibly, into the Hearts of the Young and the Tender; where it will afterwards guide and moderate their Reflections and Refolves, when grown Older. And, so, a gradual moral Sunshine, of unaustere and compassionate Virtue, shall break out upon the World, from this TRIFLE (for fuch, I dare answer for the Author, His Modesty misguides him to think it).-No Applause, therefore, can be too high, for fuch Merit. And, let me abominate the contemptible Reserves of mean-spirited Men, who, while they but hesitate their Esteem, with Restraint, can be fluent and uncheck'd in their Envy.—In an Age so deficient in Goodness, Every such Virtue, as That of this Author, is a falutary Angel in Sodom. And One who could floop to conceal a Delight he receives from the Worthy, would be equally capable of submitting to an Approbation of the Praise of the Wicked.

I was thinking, just now, as I return'd from a Walk in the Snow, on that Old Roman Policy, of Exemptions in favour of Men, who had given a few bodily Children to the Republic.—What superior Distinction ought our Country to find for Reward of this Father of Millions of MINDS, which are to owe

PRESENT EDITION. XVII

new Formation to the future Effect of his Influence.

Upon the Whole, as I never met with so pleasing, so honest, and so truly deserving a Book, I should never have done, if I explain'd all my Reasons for admiring its Author.—If it is not a Secret, oblige me so far as to tell me his Name: For since I feel him the Friend of my Soul, it would be a kind of Violation to pretend him a Stranger.—I am not able to thank you enough, for this highly acceptable Present. And as for my Daughters, They have taken into their Own Hands the Acknowledgment due from their Gratitude. I am,

DEAR SIR,

Dec. 17.

Your's, &c.

reliftles

Extracts from a Second Letter of the same Gentleman.

A T O Sentiments which I have here, or in my last, express'd, of the sweet Pamela, being ' more than the bare Truth, which every Man muit feel, who lends his Ear to the inchanting Prattler, why does the Author's Modesty mislead his Judgment, to suspect the Stile wants polishing?-No, Sir, there is an Ease, a natural Air, a dignify'd Simplicity, and measured Fulness, in it, that, refembling Life, outglows it! He has reconciled. the Pleasing to the Proper. The Thought is every where exactly cloath'd by the Expression; and becomes its Dress as roundly, and as close, as Pame-· la her Country Habit. Remember, the' she put it on with humble prospect of descending to the Level of her Purpose, it adorned her, with such unpresum'd Increase of Lovelines; sat with such e neat Propriety of elegent Neglest about her, that it threw out All her Charms, with tenfold and

a 5

resistless Influence.—And so, dear Sir, it will be always found.—When modest Beauty seeks to hide it-

felf by casting off the Pride of Ornament, it but

displays itself without a Covering: And so becoming more distinguished, by its Want of Drapery,

' grows Aronger, from its purpos'd Weakness.'

The following Objections to some Passages in Pamela were made by an anonymous Gentleman, in a Letter from the Country.

1. That the Stile, in his opinion, ought to be a little raised, at least so soon as Pamela knows the Gentleman's Love is honourable, and when her Dissidence is changed to Ease: and from about the fourth Day after Marriage, it should be equal to the Rank she is rais'd to.

2. That to avoid the Idea apt to be join'd with the Word 'Squire, the Gentleman should be stil'd Sir James, or Sir John, &c. and Lady Davers in a new Edition might procure for him the Title of a

Baronet.

3. That if the Sacred Name were seldomerrepeated, it would be better: for the Wife Man's Advice is, Be

not righteous over much.

4. That the Penance which Pamela suffers from Lady Davers might be shorten'd: That she is too timorous after owning her Marriage to that Lady, and ought to have a little more Spirit, and call her Servants to protect, and carry her to her Husband's Appointment.

5. That Females are too apt to be struck with Images of Beauty; and that the Passage where the Gentleman is said to span the Waist of Pamela with his Hands, is enough to ruin a Nation of Women by Tight-lacing.

6. That

PRESENT EDITION. XIX

6. That the Word Naughty had better be changed to some other, as Bad; Faulty, Wicked, Vile, Abominable, Scandalous: Which in most Places would give an Emphasis, for which Recourse must otherwise be had to the innocent Simplicity of the Writer; an Idea not necessary to the Moral of the Story, nor of Ad-

vantage to the Cheracter of the Heroine.

7. That the Words, p. 305. Foolish Thing that I am, had better be, Foolish that I am. The same Gentleman observes, by way of Postcript, that Jokes are often more severe, and do more Mischief, than more solid Objections; and would have one or two Passages alter'd, to avoid giving Occasion for the Supposition of a double Entendre, particularly in two Places which he mentions, viz. p. 175. and 181.

He is pleased to take notice of several other Things of less Moment, some of which are merely typographical; but very kindly expresses, on the Whole, a high Opinion of the Performance, and thinks it may do a great deal of Good: For all which, as well as for his Objections, the Editor gives him very sincere Thanks.

While some are of Opinion, That the Scenes in many Places, in the Beginning especially, are too low; others think, that the Passions of Lady Davers, in particular,

are carried too high, and above Nature.

And several have intimated, That Pamela ought, for Example-sake, to have discharged Mrs. Jewkes from her Service.

These are the most material Objections that have come to hand, all which are considered in the following Letters.

The ingenious Writer of the two preceding Letters, answersthese good-natured Objections, as follows:

'The Gentleman's Advice, fays he, not to alter Pamela at all, was both friendly, and solidly just. I run in, with full Sail, to his Anchorage, that the low Scenes are no more out of Nature, than the high Passions of proud Lady Davers. Out of Nature, do they fay? 'Tis my Astonishment how Men of Letters can read with such absent Attention! They are so far from Out of Nature, They are absolute Nature herself! or, if they must be consessed her Resemblance, they are such a Resemblance, at least, as our true Face gives

our Face in the Looking glass.

· Iwonder, indeed, what it is, that the Gentlemen, who talk of Low Scenes, wou'd defire shou'd be understood by the Epithet ?-Nothing, properly speaking, is low, that fuits well with the Place it is rais'd to.—The Passions of Nature are the same, in the Lord, and his Coachman. All, that makes them feem different, consists in the Degrees, in the Means, and the Air, whereto or wherewith they indulge them. If, in painting Distinctions like these (which arise but from the Forms of Mer Manners, drawn from Birth, Education, and Custom), a Writer falls short of his Characters, there his Scene is a low one, indeed, whatever high Fortune it flatter'd. But, to imagine that Persons of Rank are above a Concern for what is thought, felt, or acted, by others, of their Species, between whom and themselves is no Difference, except fuch as was owing to Accident, is to reduce Human Nature to a Lowness, too low for the Truth of her Frailty .-

Lowness. It is to the docile Effects of this Lowness of that amiable Girl, in her Birth, her Condition, her Hopes, and her Vanities, in every thing, in short, but her Virtue,—that her Readers are indebted, for the moral Reward, of that Virtue. And if we are to look for the Low among the Rest of the Servants,

PRESENT EDITION. XXI

Servants, less lovely tho' they are than a Pamela, there is something, however, so glowingly painted, in the Lines whereby the Author has mark'd their Distinctions—Something, so movingly forceful, in the Grief at their Parting, and Joy at the happy Return—Something so finely, at once, and so strongly and feelingly, varied, even in the smallest, and least promising, little Family Incidents! that I need only appeal from the Heads to the Hearts of the Obejctors themselves, whether these are low Scenes to be cenfur'd?

'And as for the opposite Extreme they would quarrel with, the high passion'd, and untam'd Lady Davers,—I cou'd direct' em to a Dozen or two of Quality Originals, from whom (with Exception perhaps of her Wit) one wou'd swear the Author had taken her Copy.—What a Sum might these Objectors ensure, to be paid, by the Husbands and Sons, of such termagant, hermaphrodite Minds, upon their making due Proof, that they were no longer to be found in the

Kingdom!

'I know, you are too just to imagine me capable of giving any other Opinion than my best-weigh'd and true one. But, because it is fit you should have Reasons, in support of a Judgment that can neither deserve nor expect an implicit Reception, I will run over the Anonymous Letter I herewith return you; and note with what Lightness even Men of good-natur'd Intention fall into Mistakes, by Neglect in too hasty Perusals, which their Benevolence would take pleasure in blushing at, when they discover their Weakness, in a cooler Revisal.

^{&#}x27;The Writer of this Letter is for having the Stile rais'd after Pamela's Advance in her Fortune, But surely, This was hasty Advice; because,

as the Letters are writ to her Parents, it would have look'd like forgetting, and, in some sort, insulting, the Lowliness of their inserior Condition, to have atium'd a new Air in her Language, in place of retaining a steady Humility. But, here, it must not be pass'd unobserv'd, that in her Reports of Conversations that follow'd her Marriage, she does aptly and beautifully, heighten her Stile, and her Phrases; still returning, however, to her decent Simplicity, in her Addresses to her Father and Mother.

I am against giving a Gentleman (who has ennobled himself, by reforming his Vices, and rewarding the Worth of the Friendless) the unnecessary new Toy of a Title. It is all strong in Nature, as it stands in the Letters; and I don't see how Greatness, from Titles, can add Likeness, or Power to the Passions. So compleat a Resemblance of Truth stands in need of no borrow'd Preten-

fions.

The Only of this Writer's Objections, which, I think, carries Weight, is That, which advises some little Contraction of the Prayers and Appeals to the Deity: I say, little Contraction; for they are nobly and sincerely pathetic: And I say it only in Fear, lest, if fantied to long, by the sashionably Averse to the Subject, Minds, which most want the purpos'd Impression, might hazard the Loss of its Benefit, by passing over those pious Resections, which, if shorter, would catch their Attention,

Certainly, the Gentleman's Objection against the Persecution that Pamela suffers from Lady Davers, in respect to the Relation this mad Woman bears to the Brother, is the least considered of all his Advices. And when he thinks she ought rather to have assumed the Protection of her Ser-

PRESENT EDITION XXII

vants, he seems unaware of the probable Consequence; where there was a Puppy of Quality in the Case, who had, even without Provocation, drawn his Sword on the poor passive P A M E L A. Far from bearing a Thought of exciting an abler Resentment, to the Danger of a Quarrel with so worthless a Coxcomb, how charmingly natural, apprehensive, and generous, is her Silence (during the Recital she makes of her Sufferings) with regard to this masculine Part of the Insult! as also her Prevention of Mrs. Jewkes's less delicate Bluntness, when she was beginning to complain of the Whelp Lord's Impertinence!

If I were not afraid of a Pun, I should tell the anonymous Letter-writer, that he made a too tight-laced Objection, where he quarrels with the spann'd Waist of Pamela. What, in the Name of Unshapeliness! could be find to complain of, in a beautiful Girl of Sixteen, who was born out of Germany, and had not, yet, reach'd ungraspable Roundness!—These are wonderful Sinkings from Purpose, where a Manis considering such mental, and passionate Beauties, as this Gentleman profess'd to be touch'd

by!

But, when he goes on, to object against the Word naughty (as apply'd in the Phrase naughty Master), it seems plain to me, that this Gentleman, however laudable his Intention may be on the Whole, discerns not an Elegance, one would have thought it impossible not to be struck by.—Faulty, wicked, abominable, scandalous (which are the angry Adjectives, he prefers to that sweet one), would have carried Marks of her Rage, not Affliction—whereas naughty contains, in One single significant Petulance, a Variety of inexpressible Delicacies!—It infinuates, at once, all the beautiful Struggle, between her Contempt of his Purpose, and tender Regard for

his Person; her Gratitude to Himself and his Family; her Recollection of his superior Condition.

—There is in the elegant Choice of this half-kind, half-peevish, Word, a never-enough to be prais'd speaking Picture of the Conslict betwixt her Disdain, and her Reverence!

'It is the same Case again, in Foolish Thing that I am! which this nice Gentleman would advise you to change, into Foolish that I am! He does not seem to have tasted the pretty Contempt of Herself, the submissive Diminutive, so distant from Vanity, yet allay'd by the gentle Reluctance in Self-condemnation.

'In the Occasion this Gentleman, in his Postscript, is pleased to discover for Jokes, I either find not, that he has any Signification at all, or, causeless, as I think, apprehends that such coarse-tasted Allusions to loose low-life Idioms, may be made, that not to understand what is meant by them, is both the cleanliest, and prudentest way of consuting them.

And now, Sir, you will eafily gather how far I am from thinking it needful to change any thing in Pamela. I would not feratch such a beautiful Face, for the Indies.

As to the Objection of those warm Friends to Honesty, who are for having Pamela dismiss Mrs. Jewkes; there is not One among these benevolent Complainers, who would not discern himself to have been, laudably, in the wrong, were he only to be ask'd this plain Question—Whether a Step, both ill-judg'd, and undutiful, had not been the Reverse of a PAMELA's Character?—Two or three times over, Mr. B—had inform'd her, that Mrs. Jewkes and Himself, having been equally involv'd in One Guilt, she must forgive, or condemn, Both together. After this, it grew manifest Duty, not

not to treat her with Marks of Resentment.——And, as here was a visible Necessity to appear not desirous of turning her away, so, in point of mere Moral Regard to the bad Woman Herself, it was nobler to retain her, with a Prospect of correcting, in time, her loose Habit of Thinking, than, by casting her off, to the licentious Results of her Temper, abandon her to Temptations and Danger, to which a Virtue like Pamela's could not wish her exposed.

Inspir'd, without doubt, by some Skill more than human, and comprehending in an humble, and seemingly artless, Narration, a Force that can tear up the Heart-strings, the Author of Pamela has prepared an enamouring Philtre for the Mind, which will excite such a Passion for Virtue, as scarce to leave it in the Power of the Will to neglect her

Longinus, I remember, diftinguishing by what Marks we may know the Sublime, says, it is chiefly from an Effect that will follow the Reading it: A delightfully adhering Idea, that clings sast to the Memory; and from which it is difficult for a Man to disengage his Attention.—If this is a Proof of the Sublime, there was never Sublimity more lastingly felt, than in PAMELA!

Not the Charmer's own prattling Idea stuck so close to the Heart of her Master, as the Incidents of her Story to the Thoughts of a Reader—The Author transports, and transforms, with a Power more extensive than Horace requires, in his Poet!

of Nature, that was ever painted! take possession of, and dwell in, the Memory.

And there, too, broods, the kind and the eredulous Parson WILLIAMS'S Dove (without serpentine Mixture), hatching Pity and Affection in the Mind of the Reader, for an Honesty so sincere, and unguarded.

'There, too, take their Places All the lower Sup-

ports of this beautiful Fabric .-

"I am fometimes transform'd into plain Goodman Andrews, and fometimes the good Woman, his Wife.

As for old Mr. Longman, and Jonathan the Butler, they are fure of me both, in their Turns.

Now-and-then, I am COLBRAND the Swifs; but, as broad as I stride, in that Character, I can never escape Mrs. JEWKES; who often keeps me awake in the Night—

'Till the Ghost of Lady DAVERS, drawing open the Curtains, scares the Scarer, of me, and of PA-

MELA.

'And, then, I take Shelter with poor penitent. John, and the rest of the Men and the Maids, of all whom I may say, with compassionate Marcia,

- The Youths DIVIDE their Reader.

In a Third Letter the same benevolent Gentleman writes, as follows:

I am glad, fays be, I made war, in my last, upon the Notion of altering the Stile: For, having read it twice over since then (and to Audiences, where the Tears were applausively eloquent), I could hardly, here-and-there, find a Place, where one Word can be changed for a better. There are some indeed, where 'twere possible to leave out a few, without making a Breach in the Building. But,

in short, the Author has put so bewitching a Mixture together, of the Rais'd with the Natural, and the Soft with the Strong and the Eloquent-that never Sentiments were finer, and fuller of Life! never any were utter'd fo sweetly !- Even in what relates to the pious and frequent Addresses to God, I now retract (on these two last Revisals) the Consent I half gave, on a former, to the anonymous Writer's Propofal, who advises the Author to shorten those Beauties .-Whoever confiders his Pamela with a View to find Matter for Censure, is in the Condition of a passionate Lover, who breaks in upon his Mistress, without Fear or Wit, with Intent to accuse her, and quarrel. -He came to her with Pique in his Purpose; but his Heart is too hard for his Malice—and he goes away more enflav'd, for complaining.

The same Gentleman has favoured us with an Objection, which cannot be better stated nor answered, than in his own Words; viz.

An Objection is come into my Thoughts, which I should be glad the Author would think proper to obviate in the Front of the Second Edition.

Families of affluent Fortune, who, though they may have none of Lady Davers's Insolence, will be apt to feel one of her Fears,—that the Example of a Gentleman so amiable as Mr. B——may be followed by the Jackies, their Sons, with too blind and unreflecting a Readiness. Nor does the Answer of that Gentleman to his Sister's Reproach come quite up to the Point they will rest on. For, though indeed it is true, all the World would acquit the best Gentleman in it, if he married such a Waiting-maid as Pamela, yet there is an ill-designing Partiality, in Passion, that will overthrow all the Force of that Argument; because

cause every beloved Maid will be PAMELA, in a Judg-

ment obscured by her Influence.

' And, fince the Ground of this Fear will feem folid, I don't know how to be easy, till it is shewn (nor ought it to be left to the Author's Modesty), that they who consider his Design in that Light, will be

found but short-fighted Observers.

Request it of him then to suffer it to be told them, that not a limited, but general, Excitement to Virtue, was the first and great End to his Story: And that this Excitement must have been deficient, and very imperfectly offered, if he had not looked quite as low as he could for his Example; because if there had been any Degree or Condition, more remote from the Prospect, than that which he had chosen to work on, that Degree might have feemed out of Reach of the Hope, which it was his generous Purpose to encourage—And, so, he was under an evident Necessity to find such a Jewel in a Cottage; and exposed, too, as she was, to the severest Distresses of Fortune, with Parents unable to support their own Lives, but from the daily hard Product of Labour.

Nor would it have been fufficient to have placed her thus low and diffressful, if he had not also supposed her a Servant; and that too in some elegant Family; For if she had always remained a Fellow-cottager with her Father, it must have carried an Air of Romantic Impro ability to account for her polite Education.

' If the had wanted those Improvements, which the found means to acquire in her Service, it would have been very unlikely, that she should have fucceeded so well; and had destroyed one great Use of the Story, to have allowed such uncommon Felicity to the Effect of mere personal Beauty—And it had not been judicious to have represented her as educated in a Superior Condition of Life with the proper Accomplishments, before she became reduced by Misfor-

Am-

tunes, and so not a Servant, but rather an Orphan under hopeless Distresses—because Opportunities which had made it no Wonder how she came to be so winningly qualified, would have lessen'd her Merit in being so. And besides, where had then been the purposed Excitement of Persons in Pamela's Condition of Life, by an Emulation of her Sweetness, Humility, Modesty, Patience, and Industry, to attain some faint Hope of arriving, in time, within View of her Happiness?—And what a delightful Reformation should we see, in all Families, where the Vanity of their Maids took no Turn towards Ambition to please, but by such innocent Measures, as Pamela's!

As it is clear, then, the Author was under a Necessity to suppose her a Servant, he is not to be accountable for mistaken Impressions, which the Charms he has given her may happen to make, on wrong Heads, or weak Hearts, though in favour of Maids the Reverse of her Likeness.

What is it then (they may fay) that the Lowness, and Distance of Pamela's Condition from the Gentleman's who married her, proposes to teach the Gay World, and the Fortunate?—It is this—By Comparison with that infinite Remoteness of her Condition from the Reward which her Virtue procured her, one great Proof is derived (which is Part of the Moral of Pamela), that Advantages from Birth, and Distinction of Fortune, have no Power at all when considered against those from Behaviour, and Temper of Mind: Because where the Last are not added, all the First will be boasted in vain: Whereas she who possesses the Last, finds no Want of the First, in her Instance.

In that Light alone let the Ladies of Rank look at PAMELA.—Such an alarming Reflection as that, will, at the fame Time that it raises the Hope and

Ambition of the Humble, correct and mortify the Disdain of the Proud: For it will compel them to observe, and acknowledge, that 'tis the Turn of their Mind, not the Claims of their Quality, by which (and which only) Women's Charms can be lasting: And that, while the haughty Expectation, inseparable from an elevated Rank, serve but to multiply its Complaints and Afflictions, the Condescensions of accomplish'd Humility, attracting Pity, Affection and Reverence, secure an hourly Increase of Felicity.—So that the Moral Meaning of PAMELA's Good-fortune, far from tempting young Gentlemen to marry such Maids as are found in their Families, is, by teaching Maids to deserve to be Mistresses, to stir up Mistresses to support their Distinstion.

led will als man a march one with



VERSES sent to the Bookseller;

DIRECTED

To the Unknown Author of PAMELA.

B Lest be thy pow'rful Pen, whoe'er thou art,
Thou skill'd great Moulder of the master'd Heart!
Where hast thou lain conceal'd?—or why thought sit,
At this dire Period, to unveil thy Wit?

O! late befriended Isle! had this broad Blaze,
With earlier Beamings, bless'd our Fathers Days,
The Pilot Radiance pointing out the Source,
Whence public Health derives its moral Course,
Each timely Draught some healing Pow'r had shown,
Ere gen'ral Gangrene blacken'd to the Bone.
But, fest ring now, beyond all Sense of Pain,
'Tis hopeless; and the Helper's Hand is vain.

Sweet Pamela! for ever blooming Maid! Thou dear, unliving, yet immortal, Shade! Why are thy Virtues scatter'd to the Wind? Why are thy Beauties stash'd upon the Blind?

What, tho' thy flutt'ring Sex might learn, from thee, That Merit forms a Rank, above Degree? That Pride, too conscious, falls, from ev'ry Claim, While humble Sweetness climbs, beyond its Aim? What, tho' Religion smiling from thy Eyes, Shews her plain Pow'r, and charms without Disguise? What, tho' thy warmly-pleasing moral Scheme Gives livelier Rapture than the Loose can dream? What.

[xxxii]

What, the thou build ft, by thy persuasive Life, Maid, Child, Friend, Mistress, Mother, Neighbour, Wife?

Tho' Tafte like thine each Void of Time can fill, Unfunk by Spleen, unquicken'd by Quadrille! What, tho' 'tis thine to bless the lengthen'd Hour! Give Permanence to Joy, and Use to Pow'r! Lend late-felt Blusbes to the Vain and Smart, And squeeze crampt Pity from the Miser's Heart! What, tho' 'tis thine to hush the Marriage Breeze, Teach Liberty to tire, and Chains to please? Thine tho', from Stiffness to divest Restraint, And to the Charmer, reconcile the Saint? Tho' Smiles and Tears obey thy moving Skill, And Passion's ruffled Empire waits thy Will! Tho' thine the fanfy'd Fields of flow'ry Wit, Thine, Art's whole Pow'r in Nature's Language writ! Thine, to convey strong Thought, with modest Ease, And, copying Converse, teach its Stile to please! Tho' thine each Virtue, that a God could lend; Thine ev'ry Help, that ev'ry Heart can mend! 'Tis thine in vain ! - Thou wak'ft a dying Land: And lift'st departed Hope, with fruitless Hand: Death has NO CURE. Thou hast mis-tim'd thy Aim, Rome had her GOTHS: And all, beyond, was Shame.



Which

They cleary inclinary you inner

A ling on a slog Fartures feather of to the Arland Portly or the Bonneses fingled upon the Elical Poly of the first same and the local poly of the local

What, the the warm'y thefing seval Scheme

Gives livelier Ratters than the Leolis can dream?



AMEL

espices to second R. Q. any young Maller for Servants, one . R. Q. and when it came

be recorresented (10c

went down of her bil Worls! O how

the Confort, that I that not be obliged

VIRTUE Rewarded.

In a Series of FAMILIAR LETTERS, &c.

LETTER I.

Dear Father and Mother,



Have great Trouble, and some Comfort, to acquaint you with. The I Trouble is, that my good Lady died of the Illness I mentioned to you, and left us all much grieved for the Loss of her; for she was a dear good

Lady, and kind to all us her Servants. Much I feared, that as I was taken by her Ladyship to wait upon her Person, I should be quite destitute a rain, and fore'd to return to you and my poor Mother,

Vol. I. B who I of the late the state of general lake. And to I is

who have enough to do to maintain yourselves; and, as my Lady's Goodness had put me to write and cast Accounts, and made me a little expert at my Needle, and otherwise qualified above my Degree, it was not every Family that could have found a Place that your poor Pamela was fit for: But God, whose Graciousness to us we have so often experienced at a Pinch, put it into my good Lady's Heart, on her Death-bed, just an Hour before she expired, to recommend to my young Master all her Servants, one by one; and when it came to my Turn to be recommended (for I was fobbing and crying at her Pillow,) she could only fay, My dear Son !- and so broke off a little; and then recovering - Remember my poor Pamela - And these were some of her last Words! O how my Eyes run!—Don't wonder to fee the Paper fo blotted.

Well, but God's Will must be done! - And so comes the Comfort, that I shall not be obliged to return back to be a Clog upon my dear Parents! For my Master said, I will take care of you all, my good Maidens; and for you Pamela (and took me by the Hand; yes, he took my Hand before them all) for my dear Mother's fake, I will be a Friend to you, and you shall take care of my Linen. God bless him! and pray with me, my dear Father and Mother, for a Blessing upon him, for he has given Mourning and a Year's Wages to all my Lady's Servants; and I having no Wages as yet, my Lady having faid the should do for me as I deferv'd, order'd the House-keeper to give me Mourning with the rest; and gave me with his own hand Four golden Guineas, and fome filver, which were in my old Lady's Pocket when she dy'd; and said, If I was a good Girl, and faithful and diligent, he would be a Friend to me, for his Mother's fake. And so I fend s;

ite

at

)e-

nd

But

ten

y's

fhe

all

to

ing

My

re-

and my

fo

fo

to

ts!

my

me

nem

d to

God

and

ven

Ser-

ady

er'd

reft;

lden

old

as a

be a

fend

you

you these Four Guineas for your Comfort; for Providence will not let me want: And so you may pay some old Debt with Part, and keep the other Part to comfort you both. If I get more, I am sure it is my Duty, and it shall be my Care, to love and cherish you both; for you have lov'd and cherish'd me, when I could do nothing for myself. I send them by John our Footman, who goes your Way: but he does not know what he carries; because I seal them up in one of the little Pill-boxes which my Lady had, wrapt close in Paper, that they mayn't chink; and be sure don't open it before him.

I know, dear Father and Mother, I must give you both Grief and Pleasure; and so I will only say,

Pray for your Pamela; who will ever be

Your most dutiful Daughter.

I have been scared out of my Senses; for just now, as I was folding up this Letter in my late Lady's Dreffing-room, in comes my young Master! Good Sirs! how was I frighten'd! I went to hide the Letter in my Bosom, and he, feeing me tremble, faid fmiling, To whom have you been writing Pamela?—I faid, in my Confusion, Pray your Honour forgive me! -Only to my Father and Mother. He faid, Well then, Let me see how you are come on in your Writing! O how asham'd I was!-He took it, without faying more, and read it quite thro', and then gave it me again; - and I said, Pray your Honour forgive me! — Yet I know not for what: For he was always dutiful to his Parents; and why should he be angry, that I was fo to mine! And indeed he was not angry; for he took me by the Hand, and faid, You are a good Girl, Pamela, to be kind B 2

to your aged Father and Mother. I am not angry with you, for writing such innocent Matters as these; the you ought to be wary what Tales you fend out of a Family. - Be faithful and diligent; and do as you should do, and I like you the better for this. And then he faid, Why, Pamela, you write a very pretty Hand, and spell tolerably too. I see my good Mother's Care in your Learning has not been thrown away upon you. She used to say, you lov'd Reading; you may look into any of her books to improve yourfelf, fo you take care of them. To be fure I did think nothing but curt'fy and cry, and was all in Confusion, at his Goodness. Indeed he is the best of Gentlemen, I think! But I am making another long Letter: So will only add to it, that I shall ever be

Your dutiful Daughter,

PAMELA ANDREWS,

LETTER II.

In Answer to the preceding.

Dear PAMELA,

THIRD, THURSDAY HOLLDEN BY

YOUR Letter was indeed a great Trouble, and I some Comfort, to me and your poor Mother. We are troubled, to be fure, for your good Lady's Death, who took fuch care of you, and gave you Learning, and for Three or Four Years past has always been giving you Clothes and Linen, and every-thing that a Gentlewoman need not be ashamed to appear in. But our chief Trouble is, and indeed a very great one, for fear you should be brought to any thing difhonest dishonest or wicked, by being set so above yourself. Every-body talks how you have come on, and what a genteel Girl you are; and some say, you are very pretty; and indeed, Six Months since, when I saw you last, I should have thought so myself, if you was not our Child. But what avails all this, if you are to be ruin'd and undone!—Indeed my dear Pamela, we begin to be in great Fear for you; for what signify all the Riches in the World, with a bad Conscience, and to be dishonest? We are, 'tis true, 'very poor, and find it hard enough to live; tho once, as you know, it was better with us. But we would sooner live upon the Water, and if possible, the Clay, of the Ditches I contentedly dig, than live better at the Price of our Child's Ruin.

I hope the good 'Squire has no Defign; but when he has given you so much Money, and speaks so kindly to you, and praises your coming on; and Oh! that fatal Word, that he would be kind to you, if you would do as you should do, almost kills us with

Fears.

not

cent

-Be

do,

hen

my

not

fay,

any

take

ing

ion,

t of

an-

that

WS.

and

ner.

dy's

you

ays

ing

ear

ing neft

I have spoken to good old Widow Mumford. about it, who, you know, has formerly lived in good Families; and she puts us in some Comfort; for the fays, it is not unufual, when a Lady dies, to give what she has about her Person to her Waiting-maid, and to fuch as fit up with her in her Ill-But then, Why should he smile so kindly upon you? Why should he take such a poor Girl as you by the Hand, as your Letter fays he has done twice? Why should he stoop to read your Letter to us; and commend your Writing and Spelling? And why should he give you leave to read his Mother's Books?-Indeed, indeed, my dearest Child, our Hearts ake for you; and then you feem so full of Joy at his Goodness, so taken with his kind Expressions (which, truly, are very

great Eavours, if he means well,) that we fear—yes, my dear Child, we fear—you should be too grateful,—and reward him with that Jewel, your Virtue, which no Riches, nor Favour, nor any-

thing in this Life, can make up to you.

I, too, have written a long Letter, but will fay one Thing more; and that is, that in the midst of our Poverty and Missfortunes, we have trusted in God's Goodness, and been honest, and doubt not to be happy hereaster, if we continue to be good, though our Lot is hard here; but the Loss of our dear Child's Virtue would be a Grief that we could not bear, and would bring our grey Hairs to the Grave at once.

If, then, you love us, if you wish for God's Blesfing, and your own future Happiness, we both charge you to stand upon your Guard: and, if you find the least Attempt made upon your Virtue, be sure you leave every-thing behind you, and come away to us; for we had rather see you all cover'd with Rags, and even follow you to the Churchyard, than have it said, a Child of ours preferr'd any worldly Conveniencies to her Virtue.

We accept kindly of your dutiful Present; but till we are out of Pain, cannot make use of it, for sear we should partake of the Price of our poor Daughter's Shame: So have laid it up in a Rag among the Thatch, over the Window, for a while, lest we should be robbed. With our Blessings, and our

hearty Prayers for you, we remain.

Coolinso, it of the cool

Your careful, but loving Father and Mother,

JOHN and ELIZABETH ANDREWS.

LETTER III.

Dear Father,

ır

y

n

0

,

r

d

e

e

1

e

e

1

7

1

Must needs say, your Letter has fill'd me with Trouble: For it has made my Heart, which was overflowing with Gratitude for my Master's Goodness, suspicious and fearful; and yet, I hope I shall never find him to act unworthy of his Character; for what could he get by ruining fuch a poor young Creature as me? But that which gives me most Trouble is, that you feem to mistrust the Honesty of your Child. No my dear Father and Mether, be affur'd, that, by God's Grace I never will do any thing that shall bring your grey Hairs with Sorrow to the Grave. I will die a thousand Deaths, rather than be dishonest any way. Of that be asfur'd, and fet your Hearts at rest; for altho' I have liv'd above myself for some time past, yet I can be content with Rags and Poverty, and Bread and Water, and will embrace them, rather than forfeit my good Name, let who will be the Tempter. And of this, pray rest satisfy'd, and think better of

Your dutiful Daughter till Deuth.

My Master continues to be very assable to me. As yet I see no Cause to sear any thing. Mrs Jervis the House-keeper too is very civil to me, and I have the love of every-body. Sure they can't all have Designs against me be ause they are civil! I hope I shall always behave so as to be respected by every one; and that nobody would do me more Hurt, than I am sure I would do them. Our John so often goes your way, that I will always get him to call, that you may hear from me, either by Writing (for it brings my Hand in) or by Word of Mouth.

B 4

LET-

LETTER IV.

Dear Mother,

Letter; and so I will now write to you; tho' I have nothing to say, but what will make me look more like a vain Hussy, than any thing else: However I hope I shan't be so proud as to forget myself. Yet there is a secret Pleasure one has to hear one's self prais'd. You must know then, that my Lady Davers, who, I need not tell you, is my Master's Sister, has been a Month at our House, and has taken great Notice of me, and given me good Advice to keep myself to myself. She told me I was a very pretty Wench, and that every-body gave me a very good Character, and lov'd me; and bid me take care to keep the r'ellows at a Distance; and said, That I might do, and be more valu'd for it, even by themselves.

But what pleas'd me much, was what I am going to tell you; for at Table, as Mrs. Fervis fays, my Mafter and her Ladyship talking of me, she told him, she thought me the prettiest Wench she ever faw in her Life; and that I was too pretty to live in a Bachelor's House; fince no Lady he might marry would care to continue me with her. He faid, I was vaftly improv'd, and had a good Share of Prudence and Sense above my Years; and that it would be Pity, that what was my Merit should be my Misfortune.—No, fays my good Lady, Pamela thall come and live with me, I think. He faid, With all his Heart; he should be glad to have me so well provided for. Well, faid she, I'll confult my Lord about it. She ask'd, how old I was; and Mrs fervis faid, I was Vifteen last February. O! says the, if the Wench (for so she calls all us Maiden-servants) takes care of herself, she'll improve yet more and more, as well in her Person as Mind.

Now,

Now, my dear Father and Mother, tho' this may look too vain to be repeated by me, yet are you not rejoic'd as well as I, to see my Master so willing to part with me?—This shews that he has nothing bad in his Heart. But John is just going away; and so I have only to say, that I am, and will always be,

Pray make use of the Money. You may now do it safely.

i vegetall the leitows at a levisite. And

LETTER V.

My dear Father and Mother,

write, because he is so willing to carry anything for me. He says it does him good at his Heart to see you both, and to hear you talk. He says you are both so sensible, and so honest, that he always learns something from you to the Purpose. It is a thousand Pities, he says, that such worthy Hearts should not have better Luck in the World! and wonders, that you, my Father, who are so well able to teach, and write so good a Hand, succeeded no better in the School you attempted to set up; but was forced to go to such hard Labour. But this is more Pride to me, that I am come of such honest Parents, than if I had been born a Lady.

I hear nothing yet of going to Lady Davers; and I am very easy at present here: For Mrs. Fervis uses me as if I were her own Daughter, and is a very good Woman, and makes my Master's Interest her own. She is always giving me good Counsel, and I love her, next to you two, I think, best of any-body. She keeps so good Rule and Order, she is mightily respected by us all; and takes Delight to hear me read to her; and all she loves to hear read, is good Books, which we

B 5

read whenever we are alone; fo that I think I am at home with you. She heard one of our Men, Harry, who is no better than he should be, speak freely to me; I think he call'd me his pretty Pamela, and took hold of me, as if he would have kiffed me; for which, you may be fure, I was very angry; and she took him to Task, and was as angry at him as could be; and told me she was very well pleased to see my Prudence and Modesty, and that I kept all the Fellows at a Distance. And indeed I am fure I am not proud and carry it civilly to every body; but yet, methinks, I cannot bear to be look'd upon by these Men-servants; for they feem as if they would look one thro'; and, as I generally breakfast, dine, and sup, with Mrs Fervis (so good she is to me), I am very easy that I have so little to say to them. Not but they are very civil to me in the main, for Mrs. Jervis's fake, who they see loves me; and they stand in awe of her, knowing her to be a Gentlewoman born, tho' she has had Misfortunes.

I am going on again with a long Letter; for I love Writing, and shall tire you. But when I began, I only intended to say, that I am quite searless of any Danger now: And indeed cannot but wonder at myself (tho' your Caution to me was your watchful love) that I should be so foolish as to be so uneasy as I have been: For I am sure my Master would not demean himself, so as to mink upon such a poor Girl as I, for my Harm. For such a thing would ruin his Credit as well as mine, you know: Who to be sure, may expect one of the best Ladies in the Land, So no more at present, but that I am

Your ever dutiful Daughter.

LETTER VI.

Dear Father and Mother,

Y Master has been very kind since my last; for he has given me a Suit of my late Lady's Clothes, and half a Dozen of her Shifts, and Six sine Handkerchiefs, and Three of her Cambrick Aprons, and Four Holland ones. The Clothes are fine Silk, and too rich and too good for me, to be sure. I wish it was no affront to him to make Money of them, and send it to you: It would do me more Good.

You will be full of Fears, I warrant now, of some Design upon me, till I tell you, that he was with Mrs. Fervis when he gave them me; and he gave her a Mort of good Things, at the same time, and bid her wear them in remembrance of her good Friend, my Lady, his Mother. And when he gave me these fine Things, he said, These, Pamela, are for you; have them made sit for you, when your Mourning is laid by, and wear them for your good Mistress's sake. Mrs. Fervis gives you a very good Word; and I would have you continue to behave as prudently as you have done hitherto, and every-body will be your Friend.

I was so surprised at his Goodness, that I could not tell what to say. I curt'sy'd to him, and to Mrs. Fervis for her good word; and said, I wish'd I might be deserving of his Favour, and her kindness: And nothing should be wanting in me, to the best of my Knowlege.

O how amiable a thing is doing good!—It is

all I envy great Folks for!

I always thought my young Master a fine Gentleman, as every-body says he is: But he gave these these good Things to us both with such a Gracious-

ness, as I thought he look'd like an Angel.

Mrs. Jervis says, he ask'd her, If I kept the Men at a Distance; for, he said, I was very pretty; and to be drawn in to have any of them, might be my Ruin, and make me poor and miserable betimes. She never is wanting to give me a good Word, and took Occasion to launch out in my Praise, she says. But I hope she has said no more than I shall try to deserve, tho' I mayn't at present. I am sure I will always love her, next to you and my dear Mother. So I rest

Your ever-dutiful Daughter.

World Library Constitution 12

LETTER VII.

Dear Father,

CINCE my last, my Master gave me more fine Things, He call'd me up to my late Lady's Closet, and pulling out her Drawers, he gave me Two Suits of fine Flanders lac'd Headclothes, three Pair of fine Silk Shoes, Two hardly the worfe, and just fit for me (for my Lady had a very little Foot,) and the other with wrought Silver Buckles in them; and feveral Ribbands and Top-knots of all Colours; Four Pair of white fine Cotton Stockens, and Three Pair of fine Silk ones; and Two Pair of rich Stays. I was quite assonished, and unable to speak for a while; but yet I was inwardly ashamed to take the Stockens; for Mrs. Fervis was not there: If the had, it would have been nothing. I believe I received them very aukwardly! for he fmil'd at my Aukwardness, and faid, Don't blufh, Pamela: Dost think I don't know pretty Maids should wear Shoes and Stockens. I was I was so consounded at these Words, you might have beat me down with a Feather. For, you must think, there was no answer to be made to this: So, like a Fool, I was ready to cry; and went away curt'sying and blushing, I am sure, up to the Ears; for, tho' there was no Harm in what he said, yet I did not know how to take it. But I went and told all to Mrs. Jervis, who said, God put it into his Heart to be good to me; and I must double my Diligence. It looked to her, she said, as if he would fit me in Dress for a Waiting-maid's

Place on Lady Davers's own Person.

But still your kind fatherly Cautions came into my Head, and made all these Gifts nothing near to me what they would have been. But yet, I hope, there is no Reason; for what Good could it do to him to harm such a simple Maiden as me? Besides, to be sure no Lady would look upon him. if he should so disgrace himself. So I will make myself easy; and indeed, I should never have been otherwise, if you had not put it into my Head; for my Good, I know very well. But, may-be, without these Uneasinesses to mingle with these Benefits. I might be too much puffed up: So I will conclude, All that happens is for our Good; and God bless you, my dear Father and Mother; and I know you constantly pray for a Bleffing upon me; who am, and shall always be,

Your dutiful Daughter.

LETTER VIII.

Dear PAMELA,

I CANNOT but renew my Cautions on your Master's Kindness, and his free Expression to you about the Stockings. Yet there may not be,

and I hope there is not any thing in it. But when I reflect, that there possibly may, and that if there should, no less depends upon it than my Child's everlasting Happiness in this World and the next; it is enough to make one fearful for you. Arm yourself, my dear Child, for the worst; and resolve to lose your Life sooner than your Virtue. What tho' the Doubts I fall'd you with, lessen the Pleasure you would have had in your Master's Kindness; yet what signify the Delights that arise from a few paltry fine Clothes, in comparison with a good Conscience?

These are indeed very great Favours that he heaps upon you, but so much the more to be suspected; and when you say he look'd so amiably and like an Angel, how asraid I am, that they should make too great an Impression upon you! For, tho' you are blessed with Sense and Prudence above your Years, yet I tremble to think, what a sad Hazard a poor Maiden of little more than Fisteen Years of Age stands against the Temptations of this World, and a designing young Gentleman, if he should prove so, who has so much Power to oblige, and has a kind of Authority to command as your Master.

I charge you, my dear Child, on both our Bleffings, poor as we are, to be on your Guard; there can be no Harm in that. And fince Mrs. Fervis is so good a Gentlewoman, and so kind to you, I am the easier a great deal, and so is your Mother; and we hope you will hide nothing from her, and take her Counsel in every-thing. So, with our Bleffings, and assured Prayers for you, more than for

ourselves, we remain

Your loving Father and Mother.

Be fure don't let Peoples telling you, you are pretty, puff you up; for you did not make yourfelf, yourself, and so can have no Praise due to you for it. It is Virtue and Goodness only, that make the true Beauty. Remember that, Pamela.

LETTER IX.

Dear Father and Mother,

Am forry to write you Word, that the Hopes I had of going to wait on Lady Davers are quite over. My Lady would have had me; but my Master, as I heard by-the-bye, would not consent to it. He faid, Her Nephew might be taken with me, and I might draw him in, or be drawn in by him; and he thought, as his Mother lov'd me, and committed me to his Care, he ought to continue me with him; and Mrs. Fervis would be a Mother to me. Mrs. Fervis tells me, the Lady shook her Head, and said, Ah! Brother! and that was all. And as you have made me fearful by your Cautions, my Heart at times misgives me. But I say nothing yet of your Caution, or my own Uneatiness, to Mrs. Fervis; not that I mistrust her, but for sear she should think me prefumptuous, and vain, and conceited, to have any Fears about the matter, from the great Distance between fuch a Gentleman, and so poor a Girl. But yet Mrs. Fervis seemed to build something upon Lady Davers's shaking her Head, and saying, Ab! Brother! and no more. God, I hope, will give me his Grace; and so I will not, if I can help it, make myfelf too uneafy; for I hope there is no Occasion. But every little matter that happens, I will acquaint you with, 'that you may continue to me your good Advice, and pray for

Your fad-hearted PAMELA.

LETTER X.

Dear Mother,

Y O U and my good Father may wonder you have not had a Letter from me in so many Weeks; but a sad, sad Scene, has been the Occasion of it. For, to be sure, now it is too plain, that all your Cautions were well-grounded. O my dear Mother! I am miserable, truly miserable!—But yet, don't be frighted, I am honest!—God, of his Good-

nefs, keep me fo!

O this Angel of a Master! this fine Gentleman! this gracious Benefactor to your poor Pamela! who was to take care of me at the Prayer of his good dying Mother; who was so apprehensive for me, lest I should be drawn in by Lord Davers's Nephew, that he would not let me go to Lady Davers's: This very Gentleman (yes, I must call him Gentleman, tho' he has fallen from the Merit of that Title) has degraded himself to offer Freedoms to his poor Servant! He has now shewed himself in his true Colours, and, to me, nothing appears so black, and so frightful.

I have not been idle; but had writ from time to time, how he, by fly mean Degrees, exposed his wicked Views: But somebody stole my Letter, and I know not what has become of it. It was a very long one. I fear, he that was mean enough to do bad things, in one respect, did not stick at this. But be it as it will, all the Use he can make of it will be, that he may be assamed of his Part; I not of mine: For he will see I was resolved to be virtuous, and glory'd in the Honesty of my poor Parents.

I will tell you all, the next Opportunity; for I am watch'd very narrowly; and he says to Mrs. Fervis,

This

PHELY OF

This Girl is always a scribbling; I think she may be better employ'd. And yet I work all Hours with my Needle, upon his Linen, and the fine Linen of the Family; and am, befides, about flowering him a Waistcoat,—But, Oh! my Heart's broke almost; for what am I likely to have for my Reward, but Shame and Difgrace, or else ill Words, and hard Treatment! I'll teil you all foon, and hope I shall find my long Letter.

Your most afflited Daughter.

May-be, I be and him him, too much: But it is his own Fault, if I do. For why did he lose all his Dignity with me?

LETTER XI.

Dear Mother,

X / E L L, I can't find my Letter, and fo I'll try V to recollect it all, and be as brief as I can. All went well enough in the main for some time after my Letter but one. At last, I saw some Reason to suspect; for he would look upon me, whenever he faw me, in fuch a manner, as shew'd not well; and one day he came to me, as I was in the Summer-house in the little Garden, at work with my Needle, and Mrs. Fervis was just gone from me; and I would have gone out, but he faid, No, don't go, Pamela; I have something to say to you; and you always fly me, when I come near you, as if you were afraid of me.

I was much out of Countenance, you may well think; but faid at last, It does not become your poor Servant to stay in your Presence, Sir, without your Bufiness requir'd it; and I hope I shall always

know my Place.

Well, says he, my Business does require it sometimes; and I have a mind you should stay to hear what I have to say to you.

I stood still confounded, and began to tremble, and the more when he took me by the Hand; for

now no Soul was near us.

My Sister Davers, said he, (and seem'd, I thought, to be as much at a loss for Words as I), would have had you live with her; but she would not do for you what I am resolv'd to do, it you continue faithful and obliging. What say'st thou, my Girl? said he, with some Eagerness; hadst thou not rather stay with me, than go to my Sister Davers? He look'd so, as fill'd me with Affrightment; I don't know how; wildly, I thought.

I said, when I could speak, Your Honour will forgive me; but as you have no Lady for me to wait upon, and my good Lady has been now dead this Twelvemonth, I had rather, if it would not displease you, wait upon Lady Davers, because——

I was proceeding, and he said a little hastily—— Because you are a little Fool, and know not what's good for yourself. I tell you, I will make a Gentlewoman of you, if you be obliging, and don't stand in your own Light; and so saying, he put his Arm

about me, and kiss'd me!

Now, you will fay, all his Wickedness appear'd plainly. I struggled, and trembled, and was so benumb'd with Terror, that I sunk down, not in a Fit, and yet not myself; and I sound myself in his Arms, quite void of Strength; and he kis'd me two or three times, with frightful Eagerness.—At last I burst from him, and was getting out of the Summer-house; but he held me back, and shut the Door.

I would have given my Life for a Farthing. And he said, I'll do you no Harm Pamela; don't be asraid of me. I said, I won't stay. You won't, Hussy! said he: Do you know whom you speak to? I lost all fear, and all Respect, and said, Yes I do, Sir, too well!—Well may I forget that I am your Servant, when you forget what belongs to a Master.

I fobb'd and cried most sadly. What a foolish Hussy you are! said he: Have I done you any Harm?—Yes, Sir, said I, the greatest Harm in the World: You have taught me to forget myself and what belongs to me, and have lessen'd the Distance that fortune has made between us, by demeaning yourself, to be so free to a poor Servant. Yet, Sir, I will be bold to say, I am honest, tho poor: And if you was a Prince, I would not be otherwise.

He was angry, and said, Who would have you otherwise, you soolish slut! Cease your Blubbering. I own I have demean'd myself; but it was only to try you: If you can keep this Matter secret, you'll give me the better Opinion of your Prudence; and here's something, said he, putting some Gold in my Hand, to make you Amends for the Fright I put you in. Go, take a Walk in the Garden, and don't go in till your Blubbering is over: And I charge you say nothing of what is past, and all shall be well, and I'll forgive you.

I won't take the Money, indeed, Sir, faid I; poor as I am: I won't take it. For to fay Truth, I thought it look'd like taking Earness, and so I put it upon the Bench; and as he seem'd vex'd and confus'd at what he had done, I took the Opportunity to open the Door, and went out of the Summer-

house.

He called to me, and faid, Be fecret, I charge you, Pamela; and don't go in yet, as I told you.

O how

O how poor and mean must those actions be, and how little must they make the best of Gentlemen look, when they offer such things as are unworthy of themselves, and put it into the Power of their Inseriors to be greater than they!

I took a Turn or two in the Garden, but in Sight of the House, for fear of the worst; and breathed upon my Hand to dry my Eyes, because I would not be too disobedient. My next shall tell you

more.

Pray for me, my dear Father and Mother; and don't be angry I have not yet run away from this House, so late my Comfort and Delight, but now my Terror and Anguish. I am forc'd to break off hastily.

Your dutiful and honest Daughter,

LETTER XII.

Dear Mother,

TELL, I will now proceed with my faid Story, And so, after I had dry'd my Eyes, I went in, and began to ruminate with myself what I had best to do. Sometimes I thought I would leave the House and go to the next Town, and wait an Opportunity to get to you; but then I was at a Loss to resolve whether to take away the Things he had given me or no, and how to take them away: Sometimes I thought to leave them behind me, and only go with the Clothes on my Back; but then I had two Miles and a half, and a By-way, to the Town; and being pretty well dress'd, I might come to some Harm, almost as bad as what I would run away from; and then may-be, thought I, it will be reported, I have stolen something, and so was forc'd to run away; and to carry a bad Name back with me to my dear Parents, would be a fad

thing indeed!—O how I wish'd for my grey Russet again, and my poor honest Dress, with which you stitled me out, (and hard enough too it was for you to do it! for going to this Place, when I was not twelve years old, in my good Lady's Days! Sometimes I thought of telling Mrs. Jervis, and taking her Advice, and only seared his Command to be secret; for, thought I, he may be asham'd of his Actions, and never attempt the like again: And as poor Mrs. Jervis depended upon him, thro' Missortunes, that had attended her, I thought it would be a sad thing to bring his Displeasure upon her for my sake.

In this Quandary, now considering, now crying, and not knowing what to do, I pass'd the Time in my Chamber till Evening: when desiring to be excused going to Supper, Mrs. Fervis came up to me; and said, Why must I sup without you, Pamela! Come, I see you are troubled at something;

tell me what is the Matter.

I begg'd I might be permitted to lie with her on Nights; for I was afraid of Spirits, and they would not hurt such a good Person as she. That was a silly Excuse, she said; for why was you not afraid of Spirits before?—(Indeed I did not think of that). But you shall be my Bedsellow with all my Heart, added she, let your Reason be what it will; only come down to Supper. I begg'd to be excus'd; for, said I, I have been crying so, that it will be taken Notice of by my Fellow-Servants; and I will hide nothing from you, Mrs. Jervis, when we are alone.

She was so good to indulge me; but made haste to come up to bed; and told the Servants, that I should lie with her, because she could not rest well, and would get me to read her to sleep; for she knew I lov'd Reading, she said. When we were alone, I told her all that had passed; for I thought, though he had bid me not, yet if he should come to know I had told, it would be no worse; for to keep a Secret of such a Nature, would be, as I apprehended, to deprive myself of the good Advice which I never wanted more; and might encourage him to think I did not resent it as I ought, and would keep worse Secrets, and so make him do worse by me. Was I right, my dear Mother?

Mrs. Fervis could not help mingling Tears with my Tears; for I cry'd all the Time I was telling her the Story, and begg'd her to advise me what to do; and I shew'd her my dear Father's Two Letters, and the praifed the Honesty and Inditing of them, and faid pleafing things to me of you both. But the begg'd I would not think of leaving my Service; for, fays she, in all Likelihood, you behav'd so virtuously, that he will be asham'd of what he has done, and never offer the like to you again: Tho', my dear Pamela, faid she, I fear more for your Prettiness than for any-thing else; because the best Man in the Land might love you; so she was pleas'd to fay. She wish'd it was in her Power to live independent; then she would take a little private House, and I should live with her like her Daughter.

And so, as you ordered me to take her Advice, I resolv'd to tarry to see how Things went, except he was to turn me away; altho', in your first Letter, you ordered me to come away the Moment I had any reason to be apprehensive. So dear Father and Mother, it is not Disobedience, I hope that I stay; for I could not expect a Blessing, or the good Fruits of your Prayers for me, if I was

disobedient.

All the next Day I was very fad, and began my long Letter. He saw me writing, and said (as I mention'd)

PERMIT DIVING

mention'd) to Mrs. Jervis, that Girl is always feribbling; methinks the might find fomething else to do; or to that Purpose. And when I had finish'd my Letter, I put it under the Toilet, in my late Lady's Dressing-room, whither nobody comes but myself and Mrs. Jervis, besides my Master; but when I came up again to seal it, to my great Concern, it was gone; and Mrs. Jervis knew nothing of it; and nobody knew of my Master's having been near the Place in the Time; so I have been sadly troubled about it: But Mrs. Jervis, as well as I, thinks he has it, some how or other; and he appears cross and angry, and seems to shun me, as much as he said I did him. It had better be so than worse!

But he has order'd Mrs. Jervis to bid me not pass so much Time in Writing; which is a poor Matter for such a Gentleman as he to take notice of, as I am not idle other-ways, if he did not resent what he thought I wrote upon. And this has no very good Look.

But I am a good deal easier since I lie with Mrs. Jervis; tho, after all, the Fears I live in on one Side, and his Frowning and Displeasure at what I do on the other, make me more miserable than enough.

O that I had never left my little Bed in the Loft, to be thus exposed to Temptations on one hand, or Disgusts on the other! How happy was I awhile ago! How contrary now!—Pity and pray for

God dimer you for disheld While you have ble good directly and Advitor, and Bestellow (and, O as deal Child, that was prindered done of rout) we as

Your afflicted PAMELA.

LETTER XIII.

My dearest Child,

UR Hearts bleed for your Distress, and the Temptations you are expos'd to. You have our hourly Prayers; and we would have you flee this evil Great House and Man, if you find he renews his Attempts. You ought to have done it at fifft, had you not had Mrs. Fervis to advise with. We can find no fault in your Conduct hitherto: But it makes our Hearts ake for fear of the worst. O my Child! Temptations are fore Things; but yet, without them, we know not ourfelves, nor what

we are able to do.

Your Danger is very great; for you have Riches, Youth, and a fine Gentleman, as the World reckons him, to withstand; but how great will be your Honour to withstand them! And when we consider your past Conduct, and your virtuous Education, and that you have been bred to be more asham'd of Dishonesty than Poverty, we trust in God, that He will enable you to overcome. Yet, as we can't fee but your Life must be a Burden to you, through the great Apprehensions always upon you; and that it may be presumptuos to trust too much to your own Strength; and that you are but very young; and the Devil may put it into his Heart to use some Stratagem, of which great Men are full, to decoy you; I think you had better come home to share our Poverty with Safety, than live with fo much Difcontent in a Plenty, that itself may be dangerous. God direct you for the best! While you have Mrs. Fervis for an Adviser, and Bedfellow (and, O my dear Child, that was prudently done of you!) we are easier

easier than we should be; and so, committing you to the Divine Protection, remain

Your truly loving,

But careful, Father and Mother.

LETTER XIV.

Dear Father and Mother,

S

e

t

y

-

ır

r

d

of

le

ee

e

it

ur

;;

ne

by

ur

if-

IS.

s.

ny

re

er

MRS. Fervis and I have lived very comfortably together for this Fortnight past; for my Master was all that time at his Lincolnshire Estate, and at his Sifter's the Lady Davers. But he came home Yesterday. He had some talk with Mrs. Fervis foon after, and mostly about me. He said to her, it feems, Well, Mrs. Fervis, I know Pamela, has your good Word; but do you think her of any Use in the Family? She told me, fhe was furpris'd at the Question, but said, That I was one of the most virtuous and industrious young Creatures that ever the knew. Why that Word virtuous, faid he, 1 pray you? Was there any Reason to suppose her otherwise? Or has any-body taken it into his Head to try her?—I wonder, Sir, fays she, you ask such a Question! Who dare offer any-thing to her in fuch an orderly and well-govern'd House as your's, and under a Master of so good a Character for Virtue and Honour? Your Servant, Mrs. Fervis, says he, for your good Opinion; but pray, if any body did, do you think Pamela would let you know it? Why, Sir, faid she, she is a poor innocent young Creature, and I believe has fo much Confidence in me, that she would take my Advice as foon as she would her Mother's. Innocent! again; and virtuous, I warrant! Well, YOL. I. Mrs.

Mrs. Fervis, you abound with your Epithets; but I take her to be an artful young Baggage; and had I a young handsome Butler or Steward, she'd soon make her Market of one of them, if the thought it worth while to fnap at him for a Husband. Alacka-day, Sir, faid the, 'tis early Days with Pamela; and the does not yet think of a Husband, I dare fay: And your Steward and Butler are both Men in Years, and think nothing of the Matter. No, faid he, if they were younger, they'd have more Wit than to think of such a Girl; I'll tell you my Mind of her, Mrs. Fervis: I don't think this fame Favourite of your's so very artless a Girl, as you imagine. I am not to dispute with your Honour, faid Mrs. Fervis; but I dare fay, If the Men will let her alone, she'll never trouble herself about them. Why, Mrs. Fervis, faid he, Are there any Men that will not let her alone, that you know of? No, indeed, Sir, faid she; she keeps herself so much to herself, and yet behaves so prudently, that they all efteem her, and shew her as great Respect, as if she was a Gentlewoman born.

Av, fays he, that's her Art, that I was speaking of: But, let me tell you, the Girl has Vanity and Conceit, and Pride too, or I am mistaken; and perhaps, I could give you an Instance of it. Sir, faid she, you can fee farther than fuch a poor filly Woman as I am; but I never faw any-thing but Innocence in her-And Virtue too, I'll warrant ye! faid he. But suppose I could give you an Instance, where she has talk'd a little too freely of the Kindnesses that have been shewn her from a certain Quarter; and has had the Vanity to impute a few kind Words, uttered in mere Compafion to her Youth and Circumstances, into a Design upon her, and even dar'd to make free with Names that she ought never to n ention but with Reverence and Gratitude; what would would you fay to that ?—Say, Sir! faid she, I cannot tell what to fay. But I hope Pamela incapable

of fuch Ingratitude.

Well, no more of this filly Girl, says he; you may only advise her as you are her Friend, not to give herself too much Licence upon the Favours she meets with; and if she stays here, that she will not write the Affairs of my Family purely for an Exercise to her Pen, and her Invention. I tell you, she is a subtle, artful Gypsey, and time will she w

it you.

ut

ad

in

it

k-

a;

re

cn

0,

7 it

nd

a-

12-

aid

let

m.

len

No,

to

all

fhe

ing

and

per-

lhe, nan

he.

effes ter; ords,

Cir-

lar'd

r to

what

ould

Was ever the like heard, my dear Father and Mother? It is plain he did not expect to meet with fuch a Repulse, and mistrusts that I have told Mrs. Fervis, and has my long Letter too, that I intended for you; and so is vex'd to the Heart. But I can't help it. I had better be thought artful and subtle, than be so, in his Sense; and as light as he makes of the Words Virtue and Innocence in me, he would have made a less angry Construction, had I less deserv'd that he should do so; for then, may be, my Crime would have been my Virtue with him; naughty Gentleman as he is!—

I will foon write again; but must now end with

faying, That I am, and shall always be,

Your honest Daughter.

LETTER XV.

Dear Mother,

Broke off abruptly my last Letter; for I fear'd he was coming; and so it happen'd. I put the Letter in my Bosom, and took up my Work, which lay by me; but I had so little of the Artful, as he C 2 called

called it, that I look'd as confused, as if I had been

doing some great Harm.

Sit still, *Pamela*, said he, and mind your Work, for all me.—You don't tell me I am welcome home, after my Journey to *Lincolnshire*. It would be hard, Sir, said I, if you was not welcome to your Honour's own House.

I would have gone; but he faid, Don't run away, I tell you. I have a Word or two to fay to you. Good Sirs, how my Heart went pit-a-pat! When I was a little kind to you, faid he, in the Summer-house, and you carry'd yourself so foolishly upon it, as if I had intended to do you great Harm, did I not tell you, you should take no notice of what pass'd, to any Creature? and yet you have made a common Talk of the Matter, not considering either my Reputation, or your own.—I made a common Talk of it, Sir! said I: I have no-body to talk to, hardly.

He interrupted me, and faid, Hardly! you little Equivocator! what do you mean by hardly! Let me ask you, have not you told Mrs. Fervis for one? Pray your Honour, said I, all in Agitation, let me go down; for it is not for me to hold an Argument with your Honour. Equivocator, again! said he, and took my Hand, what do you talk of an Argument? Is it holding an Argument with me, to answer a plain Question? Answer me what I ask'd. O, good Sir, said I, let me beg you will not urge me farther, for fear I forget myself again, and be saucy.

Answer me then, I bid you, says he, Have you not told Mrs. Fervis? It will be saucy in you, if you don't answer me directly to what I ask. Sir, said I, and sain would have pull'd my Hand away, perhaps I should be for answering you by another Question, and that would not become me. What is it you would say? replies he; speak out.

Then,

Then, Sir, faid I, why should your Honour be so angry, I should tell Mrs. Fervis, or any-body else,

what passed, if you intended no Harm?

n

5

e,

d,

)-

ın

to

ne

bly

n,

of

ve

n--I

ve

tle

et

for

n,

n!

an

to

'd.

me

y.

ou

, if

oir,

ay,

her

hat

en,

an ,

Well faid, pretty Innocent and Artless! as Mrs. Fervis calls you, faid he; and is it thus you taunt and retort upon me, insolent as you are! But still I will be answered directly to my Question. then, Sir, faid I, I will not tell a Lye for the World: I did tell Mrs. Fervis; for my Heart was almost broken; but I open'd not my Mouth to any other; Very well, Bold-face, faid he, and Equivocator again! You did not open your Mouth to any other; but did you not write to some other? Why now, and please your Honour, said I (for I was quite courageous just then,) you could not have asked me this Question, if you had not taken from me my Letter to my Father and Mother, in which I own I had broken my Mind freely to them, and asked their Advice, and poured forth my Griefs!

And fo I am to be exposed, am I, said he, in my House, and out of my House, to the whole World, by such a Saucebox as you? No, good Sir, said I, and I hope your Honour won't be angry with me; it is not I that expose you, if I say nothing but the Truth. So, taunting again! Assurance as you are!

faid he: I will not be thus talk'd to ! "

Pray, Sir, faid I, of whom can a poor Girl take Advice, if it must not be of her tather and Mother, and such a good Woman as Mrs. Jervis, who, for her Sex-sake, should give it me when asked? Insolence! said he, and stamped with his Foot, am I to be question'd thus by such a one as you? I felt down on my Knees, and said, for Heaven's sake, your Honour, pity a poor Creature, that knows nothing of her Duty, but how to cherish her Virtue and good Name: I have nothing else to trust to; and, though poor and friendless here, yet I had C 3

always been taught to value Honesty above my Life. Here's ado with your Honesty, said he, soolish Girl! Is it not one Part of Honesty to be dutiful and grateful to your Master, do you think? Indeed, Sir, taid I, it is impossible I should be ungrateful to your Honour, or disobedient, or deserve the Names of Boldsace and Insolent, which you call me, but when your Commands are contrary to that first Duty which shall ever be the Principle of my Life!

He feem'd to be mov'd, and rose up, and walk'd into the great Chamber two or three Turns, leaving me on my Knees; and I threw my Apron over my Face, and laid my Head on a Chair, and cry'd as if my Heart would break, having no Power to

flir.

At last he came in again, but, alas! with Mischief in his Heart ! and raising me up, he said, Rise Pamela, rife; you are your own Enemy. Your perverse Folly will be your Ruin: I tell you this, that I am very much displeased with the Freedoms you have taken with my Name to my Housekeeper, as also to your Father and Mother; and you may as well have real Cause to take these Freedoms with me, as to make my Name suffer for imaginary ones. And faying so, he offer'd to take me on his Knee, with some Force. O how I was terrified: I said, like as I had read in a Book a Night or two before, Angels, and Saints, and all the Host of Heaven defend me! And may I never survive, one Moment, that fatal one in which I shall forfeit my Innocence! Pretty Fool! said he, how will you forfeit your Innocence, if you are oblig'd to yield to a Force you cannot withstand? Be easy, said he; for let the worst happen that can, you'll have the Merit, and I the Blame; and it will be a good Subject for Letters to your Father and Mother, and a Tale into the Bargain for Mrs. Fervis. He He by Force kissed my Neck and Lips; and said, Whoever blam'd Lucretia? All the Shame lay on the Ravisher only: And I am content to take all the Blame upon me; as I have already borne too great a Share for what I have deserved. May I, said I, Lucretia like, justify myself with my Death, if I am used barbarously? O my good Girl! said he, tauntingly, you are well read, I see; and we shall make out between us, before we have done, a pretty Story in Romance, I warrant ye.

He then put his Hand in my Bosom, and Indignation gave me double Strength, and I got loose from him by a sudden Spring, and ran out of the Room! and the next Chamber being open, I made shift to get into it, and threw to the Door, and it lock'd after me; but he followed me so close, he got hold of my Gown, and tore a Piece off, which hung without the Door; for the Key was on the

Infide.

I just remember I got into the Room; for I knew nothing further of the Matter till afterwards; for I'fell into a Fit with my Terror, and there I lay, till he, as I suppose, looking through the Keyhole, 'spy'd me upon the Floor, stretch'd out at Length, on my Face; and then he called Mrs. Jervis, to me, who by his Assistance, bursting open the Door, he went away, seeing me coming to myself; and bid her say nothing of the Matter, if she was wise.

Poor Mrs. Jervis thought it was worse, and cry'd over me like as if she was my Mother; and I was Two Hours before I came to myself; and just as I got a little up on my Feet, he coming in, I fainted away again with the Terror; and so he withdrew: But he staid in the next Room to let nobody come near us, that his soul Proceedings might not

be known.

Mrs. Jervis gave me her Smelling-bottle, and had cut my Laces, and fat me in a great Chair, and he call'd her to him: How is the Girl? faid he: I never faw such a Fool in my Life. I did nothing at all to her. Mrs. Jervis could not speak for crying. So he said, She has told you, it seems, that I was kind to her in the Summer-house, tho' I'll assure you, I was quite innocent then as well as now; and I desire you to keep this Matter to yourself, and and let me not be nam'd in it.

O, Sir, said she, for your Honour's sake, and for Christ's sake.—But he would not hear her, and said—For your own sake, I tell you, Mrs. Jervis, say not a Word more. I have done her no Harm. And I won't have her stay in my House; prating, perverse Fool, as she is! But since she is so apt to fall into Fits, or at least pretend to do so, prepare her to see me To-morrow after Dinner, in my Mother's Closet, and do you be with her, and you

shall hear what passes between us.

And so he went out in a Pet, and order'd his Chariot-and-sour to be got ready, and went a visi-

ting fomewhere.

Mrs, Fervis then came to me, and I told her all that had happen'd, and faid I was refolv'd not to stay in the House: And she replying, He seem'd to threaten as much; I said, I am glad of that; then I shall be easy. So she told me all he had said to

her, as above.

Mrs. Jervis is very loth I should go; and yet, poor Woman! she begins to be afraid for herself; but would not have me ruin'd for the World. She says, to be sure he means no Good; but may be, now he sees me so resolute, he will give over all Attempts: And that I shall better know what to do after To-morrow, when I am to appear before a very bad Judge, I doubt.

O how

O how I dread this To-morrow's Appearance! But be as affured, my dear Parents, of the Honesty of your poor Child, as I am of your Prayers for

Your dutiful Daughter.

O this frightful To-morrow! how I dread it !

LETTER XVI.

My dear Parents,

TKnow you longed to hear from me foon; and I

fend you as foon as I could.

Well, you may believe how uneafily I passed the Time, till his appointed Hour came. Every Minute, as it grew nearer, my Terrors increased; and sometimes I had great Courage, and sometimes none at all; and I thought I should faint when it came to the Time my Master had dined. I could neither eat nor drink, for my part; and do what I could, my Eyes were swell'd with crying.

At last he went up to the Closet, which was my good Lady's Dressing-room; a Room I once lov'd,

but then as much hated.

Don't your Heart ake for me?—I am sure mine flutter'd about like a new-caught Bird in a Cage. O Pamela, said I to myself, why art thou so soolish and fearful? Thou hast done no Harm! What is thou fearest an unjust Judge, when thou art ininnocent, wouldst thou do before a just one, if thou wert guilty? Have Courage, Pamela, thou know'st the worst! And how easy a Choice Poverty and Honesty is, rather than Plenty and Wickedness.

So I chear'd myself; but yet my poor Heart funk, and my Spirits were quite broken. Every thing thing that stirred, I thought was to call me to my Account. I dreaded it, and yet I wished it to come.

Well, at last he rung the Bell; O, thought I, that it was my Passing-bell! Mrs. Fervis went up, with a sull Heart enough, poor good Woman! He said, Where's Pamela? Let her come up, and do you come with her. She came to me: I was ready to go with my Feet; but my Heart was with my dear Father and Mother, wishing to share your Poverty and Happiness. I went up, however.

O how can wicked Men feem fo fleady and untouch'd, with fuch black Hearts, while poor In-

nocents stand like Malefactors before them !

He look'd so stern, that my Heart fail'd me, and I wish'd myself any-where but there, tho' I had before been summoning up all my Courage. Good Heaven, said I to myself, give me Courage to stand before this naughty Master! O soften him, or harden me!

Come in, Fool, said he, angrily, as soon as he saw me (and snatch'd my Hand with a Pull); you may well be asham'd to see me, after your Noise and Nonsense, and exposing me as you have done. I am asham'd to see you! thought I: Very pretty

indeed !- But I faid nothing.

Mrs. Jervis, said he, here you are both together. Do you sit down; but let her stand, if she will. Ay, thought I, if I can; for my Knees beat one against another. Did you not think, when you saw the Girl in the Way you found her in, that I had given her the greatest Occasion for Complaint, that could possibly be given to a Woman? And that I had actually ruin'd her, as she calls it? Tell me, could you think any-thing less? Indeed, said she, I fear'd so at first. Has she told you what I did to her, and all I did to her, to occasion all this Folly, by which

my Reputation might have suffered in your Opinion, and in that of all the Family?—Inform me, what

fhe has told you?

She was a little too much frighted, as she owned afterwards, at his Sternness, and said, Indeed she told me you only pulled her on your Knee, and kissed her.

Then I pluck'd up my Spirit a little. Only! Mrs. Jervis, faid I? and was not that enough to shew me what I had to sear? When a Master of his Honour's Degree demeans himself to be so free as that to such a poor Servant as me, what is the next to be expected?—But your Honour went surther, so you did; and threaten'd me what you would do, and talk'd of Lucretia, and her hard Fate.—Your Honour knows you went too far for a Master to a poor Servant, or even to his Equal; and I cannot bear it.

So I fell a crying most fadly.

Mrs. Fervis began to excuse me, and to beg he would pity a poor Maiden, that had such a Valu: for her Reputation. He said, I speak it to her Face, I think her very pretty, and I thought her humble, and one that would not grow upon my Favours, or the Notice I took of her; but I abhor the Thought of forcing her to any thing. I know myself better, said he, and what belongs to me: And to be sure I have enough demean'd myself to take notice of such a one as she; but I was bewitch'd by her, I think, to be freer than became me; tho' I had no Intention to carry the Jest farther.

What poor Stuff was all this, my dear Mother, from a Man of his Sense! but see how a bad Cause and bad Actions confound the greatest Wits!—It gave me a little more Courage then; for Innocence, I find, in a low Fortune, and weak Mind, has many Advantages over Guilt, with all its Riches

and Wisdom.

So I faid, Your Honour may call this Jest or Sport, or what you please; but indeed, Sir, it is not a Jest that becomes the Distance between a Master and a Servant. Do you hear, Mrs. Jervis? faid he: Do you hear the Pertness of this Creature? I had a good deal of this Sort before in the Summerhouse, and Yesterday too, which made me rougher with her than perhaps I had otherwise been.

Says Mrs. Jervis, Pamela, don't be so pert to his Honour: You should know your Distance; you see his Honour was only in Jest.—O dear Mrs. Jervis, said I, don't you blame me too. It is very difficult to keep one's Distance to the greatest of Men, when they won't keep it themselves to their meanest

Servants.

See again! faid he; could you believe this of the young Baggage, if you had not heard it? Good your Honour, faid the well-meaning Gentlewoman, pity and forgive the poor Girl; the is but a Girl, and her Virtue is very dear to her; and I will pawn my Life for her, the will never be pert to your Honour, if you'll be so good as to molest her no more, nor frighten her again. You faw, Sir, by her Fit, she was in Terror; she could not help it; and though your Honour intended her no Harm, vet the Apprehension was almost Death to her: And I had much ado to bring her to herself again. O the little Hypocrite! faid he; she has all the Arts of her Sex; they were born with her; and I told you a while ago you did not know her. But this was not the Reason principally of my calling you before me together: I find I am likely to fuffer in my Reputation by the Perverseness and Folly of this Girl. She has told you all, and perhaps more than all; nay, I make no doubt of it; and she has written Letters (for I find the is a mighty Letterwriter!) to her Father and Mother, and others, as

far as I know; in which representing herself as an Angel of Light, she makes her kind Master and Benefactor, a Devil incarnate—(O how People will sometimes, thought I, call themselves by their right Names!—). And all this, added he, I won't bear; and so I am resolv'd she shall return to the Distresses and Poverty she was taken from; and let her be careful how she uses my Name with Freedom, when

the is gone from me.

I was brighten'd up at once with these welcome Words: And I threw myself upon my Knees at his Feet, with a most sincere glad Heart; and I said, May your Honour be for ever blessed for your Resolution! Now I shall be happy. And permit me, on my bended Knees, to thank you for all the Benefits and Favours you have heap'd upon me; for the Opportunities I have had of Improvement and Learning, thro' my good Lady's Means, and your's. I will now forget all your Honour has offer'd to me: And I promise you, that I will never let your Name pass my Lips, but with Reverence and Gratitude: And so God Almighty bless your Honour, for ever and ever, Amen!

Then rifing from my Knees, I went away with another-guise fort of Heart than I came into his Presence with: And so I sell to writing this Letter.

And thus all is happily over.

And now, my dearest Father and Mother, expect to see soon your poor Daughter, with an humble and dutiful Mind, return'd to you: And don't sear but I know how to be as happy with you as ever: For I will lie in the Lost, as I used to do; and pray let my little Bed be got ready; and I have a small Matter of Money, which will buy me a Suit of Cloaths, fitter for my Condition than what I have; and I will get Mrs. Mumford to help me to some Needle-work; and sear not that I shall be a Burden

den to you, if my Health continues. I know I shall be blessed, if not for my own sake, for both your sakes, who have, in all your Trials and Misfortunes, preserved so much Integrity, as makes every-body speak well of you both. But I hope he will let good Mrs. Jervis give me a Character, for fear it should be thought I was turn'd away for Dishonesty.

And so, my dear Parents, may you be blest for me, and I for you! And I will always pray for my Master and Mrs. Fervis. So good Night; for it

is late, and I shall be foon call'd to bed.

I hope Mrs. Jervis is not angry with me. She has not called me to Supper: Tho' I could eat nothing, if she had. But I make no doubt I shall sleep purely To-night, and dream that I am with you, in my dear, dear, happy Lost once more.

So good Night again, my dear Father and Mo-

ther, fays

Your poor honest Daughter.

Perhaps I may'n't come this Week, because I must get up the Linen, and leave in Order every-thing belonging to my Place. So send me a Line, if you can, to let me know if I shall be welcome, by John, who will call for it as he returns. But say nothing of my coming away to him, as yet: For it will be said I blab every-thing.

LETTER XVII.

My dearest Daughter,

MELCOME, welcome, ten Times welcome, shall you be to us; for you come to us innocent, and happy, and honest; and you are the Staff

of our old Age, and our Comfort. And tho' we cannot do for you as we would, yet, fear not, we shall live happily together; and what with my diligent Labour, and your poor Mother's Spinning, and your Needle-work, I make no doubt we shall do better and better. Only your poor Mother's Eyes begin to fail her; tho', I bless God, I am as strong and able, and willing to labour as ever; and, O my dear Child, your Virtue has made me, I think, stronger and better than I was before. What blessed Things are Trials and Temptations, when we have the Strength to resist and subdue them!

But I am uneasy about those same four Guineas: I think you should give them back again to your Master; and yet I have broken them. Alas! I have only three left; but I will borrow the fourth, if I can, Part upon my Wages, and Part of Mrs. Mumford, and send the whole Sum back to you, that you may return it, against John comes next,

if he comes again before you.

I want to know how you come. I fancy honest John will be glad to bear you Company Part of the Way, if your Master is not so cross as to forbid him. And if I know time enough, your Mother will go one five Miles, and I will go ten on the Way, or till I meet you, as far as one Holiday will go; for that I can get Leave to make on such an Occasion: And we shall receive you with more Pleasure than we had at your Birth, when all the worst was over; or than we ever had in our Lives.

And so God bless you, till the happy Time comes! say both your Mother and I; which is all

HII THE COURT AND A SECTION ASSESSMENT

TRIBLED DISCOURTS TO THE

at present, from

Your truly loving Parents.

LETTER XVIII.

Dear Father and Mother,

Thank you a thousand Times for your Goodness to me, expressed in your last Letter. I now long to get my Business done, and come to my new old Lot again, as I may call it. I have been quite another thing since my Master has turned me off; and as I shall come to you an honest Daughter, what Pleasure it is to what I should have had, if I could not have seen you but as a guilty one. Well, my Writing-time will soon be over, and so I will make use of it now, and tell you all that has happened since

my last Letter.

I wondered Mrs. Fervis did not call me to supwith her, and feared the was angry; and when I had finished my Letter, I long'd for her coming to bed. At last she came up, but seemed shy and referved; and I faid, my dear Mrs. Fervis, I am glad to fee you: You are not angry with me, I hope. She faid the was forry Things had gone for far; and that she had a great deal of Talk with my Master after I was gone; that he seem'd moved at what I faid, and at my falling on my Knees to him, and my Prayer for him, at my going away. He faid, I was a strange Girl; he knew not what to make of me: And is she gone? faid he: I intended to fay fomething else to her; but she behav'd so oddly, that I had not Power to stop her. She asked, If the should call me again? He said, Yes; and then, no, let her go; it is best for her and me too; and she shall go, now I have given her Warning. Where she had it, I can't tell; but I never met with the Fellow of her in my Life, at any Age. She faid, he had ordered her not to tell me all: But fhe believed he never would offer any-thing to me again.

again, and I might stay, she fansy'd, if I would beg it as a Favour; tho' she was not fure neither.

I stay! dear Mrs. fervis, said I; why 'tis the best News that could have come to me, that he will let me go. I do nothing but long to go back again to my Poverty and Distress, as he threatened I should; for tho' I am sure of the Poverty, I shall not have half the Distress I have had for some Months past, I'll assure you.

Mrs. Jervis, dear good Soul! wept over me, and faid, Well, well, Pamela, I did not think I had shewn so little Love to you, as that you should express so much Joy upon leaving me. I am sure I never had a Child half so dear to me as you are.

I wept to hear her so good to me, as indeed she has always been; and faid, What would you have me to do, dear Mrs. Fervis? I love you next to my own Father and Mother, and to leave you is the chief Concern I have at quitting this Place; but I am fure it is certain Ruin if I stay. After such Offers, and fuch Threatenings, and his comparing himfelf to a wicked Ravisher, in the very Time of his last Offer; and turning it into a Jeft, that we should make a pretty Story in Romance; can I stay and be safe? Has he not demeaned himself twice? And it behoves me to beware of the third Time, for fear he should lay his Snares furer; for perhaps he did not expect a poor Servant would refift her Master so much. And must it not be looked upon as a fort of Warrant for fuch Actions, if I flay after this? For, I think, when one of our Sex finds she is attempted, it is an Encouragement to the Attempter to proceed, if one puts one's felf in the way of it, when one can help it: 'I is neither more nor less than inviting him to think, that one forgives, what in short, ought not to be forgiven: Which is no small Countenance to foul Actions, I'll affure you. She

She hugged me to her, and faid, I'll assure you! Pretty-face, where gottest thou all thy Knowledge, and thy good Notions, at these Years? Thou art a Miracle for thy Age, and I shall always love thee.

-But, do you resolve to leave us, Pamela?

Yes, my dear Mrs. Jervis, faid I; for as Matters stand, how can I do otherwise?—But I'll sinish the Duties of my Place first, if I may; and hope you'll give me a Character, as to my Honesty, that it may not be thought I was turned away for any Harm. Ay, that I will, said she; I will give thee such a Character as never Girl at thy Years deserved. And, I am sure, said I, I will always love and honour you, as my third best Friend, where-ever I go, or whatever becomes of me.

And so we went to Bcd, and I never waked till 'twas time to rise; which I did, as blythe as a Bird, and went about my Business with great Pleasure.

But I believe my Master is fearfully angry with me; for he passed by me two or three Times, and would not speak to me; and towards Evening he met me in the Passage, going into the Garden, and said such a Word to me as I never heard in my Life from him, to Man, Woman, or Child; for he first said, this Creature's always in the Way, I think. I said, standing up as close as I could (and the Entry was wide enough for a Coach too), I hope I shan't be long in your Honour's Way. D—n you! said he (that was the hard Word), for a little Witch; I have no Patience with you.

I profess I trembled to hear him say so; but I saw he was vexed; and, as I am going away, I minded it the less. Well! I see, my dear Parents, that when a Person will do wicked Things, it is no Wonder he will speak wicked Words. May God

keep out of the way of them both,

Your dutiful Daughter.
L E T-

LETTER XIX.

Dear Father and Mother,

UR John having an Opportunity to go your Way, I write again, and fend both Letters at once. I can't fay, yet, when I shall get away, nor how I shall come; because Mrs. Jervis shewed my Master the Waistcoat I am slowering for him, and he said, It looks well enough: I think the Creature

had best stay till she has finished it.

There is some private Talk carried on betwixt him and Mrs. Fervis, that she don't tell me of; but yet she is very kind to me, and I don't mistrust her at all. I should be very base if I did. But to be sure, she must oblige him, and keep all his lawful Commands; and other, I dare say, she won't keep: She is too good, and loves me too well; but she must stay when I am gone, and so must get no Ill-will.

She has been at me again to ask to stay, and humble myself. But what have I done, Mrs. Fervis? said I: If I have been a Sauce-box, and a Boldface, and Pert, and a Creature, as he calls me, have I not had Reason? Do you think I should ever have forgot myself, if he had not forgot to act as my Master? Tell me from your own Heart, dear Mrs. Fervis, said I, if you think I could stay and be safe: What would you think, or how would you act, in my Case?

My dear Pamela, said she, and kissed me, I don't know how I should act, or what I should think. I hope I should act as you do. But I know nobody else that would. My Master is a fine Gentleman; he has a great deal of Wit, and Sense, and is admir'd, as I know, by half a dozen Ladies, who would think

themselves

themselves happy in his Addresses. He has a noble Estate; and yet I believe he loves my good Maiden, tho' his Servant, better than all the Ladies in the Land; and he has tried to overcome it, because you are so much his Inserior; and 'tis my Opinion he finds he can't; and that vexes his proud Heart, and makes him resolve you shan't stay; and so he speaks so cross to you, when he sees you by Accident.

Well, but, Mrs. Fervis, faid I, let me ask you, if he can stoop to like such a poor Girl as me, as perhaps he may (for I have read of Things almost as strange, from great Men to poor Damsels), What can it be for?—He may condescend, perhaps, to think I may be good enough for his Harlot; and those Things don't disgrace Men, that ruin poor Women, as the World goes. And fo if I was wicked enough, he would keep me till I was undone. and till his Mind changed; for even wicked Men, I have read, foon grow weary of Wickedness with the fame Person, and love Variety. Well then, poor Pamela must be turned off, and looked upon as a vile abandoned Creature, and every-body would despise her; ay, and justly too, Mrs. Fervis; for fhe that can't keep her Virtue, ought to live in Difgrace.

But, Mrs. Fervis, continued I, let me tell you; that I hope, if I was fure he would always be kind to me, and never turn me off at all, that I shall have so much Grace, as to hate and withstand his Temptations, were he not only my Master, but my King; and that for the Sin's sake. This my poor dear Parents have always taught me; and I should be a sad wicked Creature indeed, if, for the sake of Riches or Favour, I should forfeit my good Name: Yea, and worse than any other young Body of my Sex; because I can so contentedly return to my

Poverty

Poverty again, and think it a less Disgrace to be obliged to wear Rags, and live upon Rye-bread and Water, as I used to do, than to be a Harlot to the greatest Man in the World.

Mrs. Fervis lifted up her Hands, and had her Eyes full of Tears. God bless you, my dear Love! faid she; you are my Admiration and Delight.—

How shall I do to part with you!

Well, good Mrs. Fervis, said I, let me ask you now:—You and he have had some Talk, and you mayn't be suffered to tell me all. But, do you think, if I was to ask to stay, that he is sorry for what he has done? Ay, and asham'd of it too? For I am sure he ought, considering his high Degree, and my low Degree, and how I have nothing in the World to trust to but my Honesty: Do you think in your own Conscience now, (pray answer me truly) that he would never offer any thing to me again, and that I could be safe?

Alas! my dear Child, said she, don't put thy home Questions to me, with that pretty becoming Earnestness in thy Look. I know this that he is vexed at what he has done; he was vexed the first

Time, more vexed the fecond Time.

Yes, faid I, and so he will be vexed, I suppose, the third, and the fourth Time to, till he has quite ruined your poor Maiden; and who will have Cause

to be vexed then?

Nay, Pamela, said she, don't imagine that I would be accessory to your Ruin for the World. I only can say, that he has, yet, done you no Hurt; and 'tis no Wonder he should love you, you are so pretty; tho' so much beneath him: But I dare swear for him, he never will offer you any Force.

You fay, faid I, that he was forry for his first Offer in the Summer-house. Well, and how long did his Sorrow last?—Only till he found me by myself;

and then he was worse than before: And so became forry again. And if he has deigned to love me, and you fay can't help it, why, he can't help it neither, if he should have an Opportunity, a third Time to distress me. And I have read, that many a Man has been asham'd of his wicked Attempts, when he has been repulfed, that would never have been ashamed of them, had he succeeded. Besides, Mrs. Jervis, if he really intends to offer no Force, What does that mean?—While you fay he can't help liking me, for Love it cannot be-Does it not imply, that he hopes to ruin me by my own Confent? I think, said I (and I hope I should have Grace to do fo), that I should not give way to his Temptations on any Account; but it would be very prefumptuous in me to rely upon my own Strength, against a Gentleman of his Qualifications and Estate, and who is my Master; and thinks himself intitled to call me Bold-face, and what not? only for standing on my necessary Defence; And that, too, where the Good of my Soul and Body, and my Duty to God, and my Parents, are all concerned. How then Mrs. Fervis, faid I, can I ask or wish to stay?

Well, well, says she; as he seems very desirous you should not stay, I hope it is from a good Motive; for fear he should be tempted to disgrace himself as well as you. No, no, Mrs. Jervis, said I; I have thought of that too; for I would be glad to consider him with that Duty that becomes me: But then he would have let me go to Lady Davers, and not have hindered my Preferment: And he would not have said, I should return to my Poverty and Distress, when, by his Mother's Goodness, I had been listed out of it; but that he intended to fright me, and punish me, as he thought, for not complying with his Wickedness: And this shews me enough

what

what I have to expect from his future Goodness, ex-

cept I will deserve it at his own dear Price.

She was filent, and I added, Well, there's no more to be faid; I must go, that's certain: All my Concern will be how to part with you: And indeed, after you, with every-body; for all my Fellow-Servants have loved me, and you and they will cost me a Sigh, and a Tear too, now and then, I am sure. And so I fell a crying: I could not help it. For it is a pleasant Thing to one to be in a House among a great many Fellow-Servants, and be beloved by them all.

Nay, I should have told you before now, how kind and civil Mr. Longman our Steward is; vastly courteous, indeed, on all Occasions! And he said once to Mrs. Fervis, he wished he was a young Man for my sake; I should be his Wife, and he would settle all he had upon me on Marriage; and, you must know, he is reckoned worth a Power of

Money.

e

e

2000

I take no Pride in this; but bless God, and your good Examples, my dear Parents, that I have been enabled so to carry myself, as to have every body's good Word: Not but our Cook one Day, who is a little snappish and cross sometimes, said once to me, Why this Pamela of ours goes as sine as a Lady. See what it is to have a fine Face!—I wonder what the Girl will come to at last!

She was hot with her Work; and I fneaked away; for I feldom go down into the Kitchen; and I heard the Butler fay, Why Jane, nobody has your good Word: What has Mrs. Pamela done to you? I am fure she offends nobody. And what, said the peevish Wench, have I said to her, Foolatum; but that she was pretty? They quarrelled afterwards, I heard: I was forry for it, but troubled

troubled myself no more about it. Forgive this silly Prattle, from

Your dutiful Daughter.

Oh! I forgot to fay, that I would stay to finish the Waistcoat, if I might with Safety. Mrs. Fervis tells me I certainly may. I never did a prettier Piece of Work; and I am up early and late to get it over; for I long to be with you.

LETTER XX.

And for River devices Lengthan

Dear Father and Mother,

DID not fend my last Letters so soon as I hoped, because John (whether my Master mistrusts or no, I can't say) had been sent to Lady Davers's, instead of Isaac, who used to go; and I could not be so free with, nor so well trust Isaac; tho' he is very civil to me too. So I was forced to stay till

John returned.

As I may not have Opportunity to fend again foon, and yet as I know you keep my Letters, and read them over and over (so John told me) when you have done Work (so much does your Kindness make you love all that comes from your poor Daughter), and as it may be some little Pleasure to me, perhaps, to read them myfelf, when I am come to you, to remind me of what I have gone through, and how great God's Goodness has been to me (which, I hope, will further ftrengthen my good Refolutions, that I may not hereafter, from my bad Conduct, have Reason to condemn myself from my own Hand as it were): For all these Reasons, I fay, I will write as I have Time, and as Matters happen, and fend the Scribble to you as I have Opportunity; and if I don't every time, in form, fubscribe as I ought, I am sure you will always believe, that it is not for want of Duty. I will

I will begin where I left off, about the Talk between

Mrs. Fervis and me, for me to ask to stay.

Unknown to Mrs. Jervis, I put a project, as I may call it, in practice. I thought with myself fome Days ago, Here I shall go home to my poor Father and Mother, and have nothing on my back, that will be fit for my Condition; for how should your poor Daughter look with a Silk Night-gown, Silken Petticoats, Cambrick Head-cloaths, fine Holland Linen, laced Shoes, that were my Lady's; and fine Stockens! And how in a little while must these have looked, like old cast-offs indeed, and I looked fo for wearing them! And People would have faid (for poor Folks are envious, as well as rich.) See there Goody Andrews's Daughter, turn'd home from her fine Place! What a tawdry Figure she makes! And how well that Garb becomes her poor Parents Circumstances!—And how would they look upon me, thought I to myfelf, when they should come to be thread-bare and worn out? And how should I look, even if I could purchase homefpun Cloaths, to dwindle into them one by one, as I got them? - May be, an old Silk Gown, and a Linfey-woolfey Petticoat, and the like. So, thought I, I had better get myself at once 'quipp'd in the Dress that will become my Condition; and tho' it may look but poor to what I have been used to wear of late Days, yet it will serve me, when I am with you, for a good Holiday and Sunday Suit, and what, by a Bleffing on my Industry, I may, perhaps, make shift to keep up to.

So, as I was faying, unknown to any body, I bought of Farmer Nichols's Wife and Daughters a good fad-coloured Stuff, of their own Spinning, enough to make me a Gown and two Petticoats; and I made Robings and Facings of a pretty Bit of

Vol. I. D

I had

I had a pretty good Camblet quilted Coat, that I thought might do tolerably well; and I bought two Flannel Under-coats; not fo good as my Swan-skin and fine Linen ones, but what will keep me warm, if any Neighbour should get me to go out to help em to milk, now-and-then, as sometimes I used to do formerly; for I am resolved to do all your good Neighbours what Kindness I can; and hope to make myself as much belov'd about you, as I am here.

I got some pretty good Scots Cloth, and made me, at Mornings and Nights, when nobody saw me, two Shifts; and I have enough left for two Shirts, and two Shifts, for you my dear Father and Mother. When I come home, I'll make them for you, and

desire your Acceptance.

Then I bought of a Pedlar two pretty enough round-ear'd Caps, a little Straw-hat, and a pair of knit Mittens, turned up with white Calico; and two Pair of ordinary blue Worsted Hose, that make a smartish Appearance with white Clocks, I'll assure you; and two yards of black Ribband for my Shift Sleeves, and to serve as a Necklace; and when I had 'em all come home, I went and looked upon them once in two Hours, for two days together: For, you must know, tho' I lie with Mrs. fervis, I keep my own little Appartment still for my Cloaths, and no body goes thither but myself. You'll say I was no bad Housewise to have sav'd somuch Money; but my dear good Lady was always giving me something.

I believed myself the more obliged to do this, because, as I was turned away for what my good Master thought Want of Duty; and as he expected other Returns for his Presents, than I intended to make him; so I thought it was but just to leave his Presents behind me when I went away;

for,

for, you know, if I would not earn his Wages, why should I have them?

n

0

,

1

Don't trouble yourself about the sour Guineas, nor borrow to make them up; for they were given me, with some Silver, as I told you, as a Perquisite, being what my Lady had about her when she died; and, as I hope for no Wages, I am so vain as to think I have deserved all that Money in the sourteen Months, since my Lady's Death: for she, good Soul, over-paid me before, in Learning and other Kindnesses.—Had she lived, none of these Things might have happened!—But I ought to be thankful 'tis no worse. Everything will turn about for the best; that's my Confidence.

So, as I was faying, I have provided a new and more suitable Dress, and I long to appear in it, more than ever I did in any new Cloaths in my Life; for then I shall be soon after with you, and at ease in my Mind—But, mum!-Here he comes, I believe.—I am, &c.

LETTER XXI.

My dear Father and Mother,

I Was forced to break off; for I feared my Master was coming; but it proved to be only Mrs. Fervis. She said, I can't endure you should be so much by your self, Pamela. And, I, said I, dread nothing so much as Company; for my Heart was up at my Mouth now, for fear my Master was coming. But I always rejoice to see dear Mrs. Fervis.

Said she, I have had a world of talk with my Master about you, I am forry for it, said I, that I am made of so much Consequence as to be talked

of by him. O, faid she, I must not tell you all; but you are of more Consequence to him than you think for—

Or wish for, said I; for the Fruits of being of Consequence to him, would make me of none to

myself, or any-body else.

Said she, Thou art as witty as any Lady in the Land: I wonder where thou gottest it. But they must be poor Ladies, with such great Opportunities, I am sure, if they have no more wit than I.—But let that pass.

I suppose, said I, that I am of so much Consequence, however, as to vex him, if it be but to think he can't make a Fool of such a one as I; and that is nothing at all, but a Rebuke to the Pride of his high Condition, which he did not expect, and

knows not how to put up with.

There is fomething in that, may-be, faid she; but indeed Pamela, he is very angry with you too; and calls you twenty perverse Things; wonders at his own Folly, to have shewn you so much Favour, as he calls it; which he was first inclined to, he says, for his Mother's sake, and would have persisted to shew you for your own, if you was not your own Enemy.

Nay, now I shan't love you Mrs fervis, said I; you are going to persuade me to ask to stay, tho' you know the Hazards I run.—No, said she, he says you shall go; for he thinks it won't be for his Reputation to keep you: But he wish'd (don't speak of it for the World, Pamela), that he knew a Lady of Birth, just such another as yourse!f, in Person and Mind, and he would marry her To-

morrow.

I coloured up to the Ears at this Word; but said, Yet if I was the Lady of Birth, and he would offer to be rude first, as he has twice done to poor me, I don't I don't know whether I would have him: For her that can bear an Insult of that kind, I should think not worthy to be a Gentleman's Wife; any more than he would be a Gentleman that would offer it.

u

O

e

0

d

f

Nay, now, Pamela, said she, thou carriest thy Notions a great way. Well, dear Mrs. Fervis, said I, very seriously, for I could not help it, I am more sull of Fears than ever. I have only to beg of you, as one of the best Friends I have in the World, to say nothing of my asking to stay. To say my Master likes me, when I know what End he aims at, is Abomination to my Ears; and I shan't think myself safe, till I am at my poor Father's and Mother's.

She was a little angry with me, till I assured her that I had not the least Uneasiness on her Account, but thought myself safe under her Protection and Friendship. And so we dropt the Discourse for that Time.

I hope to have finished this ugly Waisscoat in two Days; after which, I have only some Linen to get up, and shall then let you know how I contrive as to my Passage; for the heavy Rains will make it sad travelling on foot: But may be I may get a Place to—, which is Ten Miles of the Way, in Farmer Nichols's close Cart; for I can't sit a Horse well at all, and may be nobody will be suffered to see me on upon the Way. But I hope to let you know more.

the with could be in a proper description of the could

From, &c.

HOROLA DEZ SENSE IS ANA

LETTER XXII.

My dear Father and Mother,

A LL my Fellow-servants have now some Notion, that I am to go away; but can't imagine for what. Mrs. Fervis tells them, that my Father and Mother, growing in Years, cannot live without me; and so I go home to them, to help to comfort their old Age; but they seem not to believe it.

What they found it out by, was, the Butler heard him fay to me, as I passed by him, in the Entry leading to the Hall, Who's that? Pamela, Sir, said I. Pamela! said he, How long are you to stay here?—Only, please your Honour, said I, till I have done the Waistcoat; and it is almost sinished.—You might, says he (very roughly indeed), have finished that long enough ago, I should have thought. Indeed, and please your Honour, said I, I have worked early and late upon it; there is a great deal of Work in it.—Work in it! said he; You mind your Pen more than your Needle; I don't want such idle Sluts to stay in my House.

He feemed startled, when he saw the Butler. As he entered the Hall, where Mr. Jonathan stood, What do you here? said he.—The Butler was as much confounded as I; for I, never having been taxed so roughly, could not help crying sadly; and got out of both their Ways to Mrs. Jervis, and told my Complaint. This Love, said she, is the D—1! In how many strange Shapes does it make People shew themselves! And in some the farthest from

their Hearts.

So one, and then another, has been fince whispering Pray, Mrs. Jervis, are we to lose Mrs. Pamela? as they always call me—What has she done? And then

then fhe tells them as above, about going home to

you.

She said afterwards to me, well, Pamela, you have made our Master, from the sweetest temper'd Gentleman in the World, one of the most peevish. But you have it in your Power to make him as sweet-temper'd as ever; tho' I hope you'll never do it on his Terms.

This was very good in Mrs. Jervis; but it intimated, that she thought as ill of his Designs as I; and as she knew his Mind more than I, it convinced me that I ought to get away as fast as I could.

My Master came in, just now, to speak to Mrs. fervis about Houshold Matters, having some Company to dine with him To-morrow; and I stood up, and having been crying at his Roughness in the Entry, I turned away my Face.

You may well, said he, turn away your cursed Face; I wish I had never seen it!—Mrs. Jervis, now long is the to be about this Waistepat?

Sir, said I, if your Honour had pleased, I would have taken it with me; and tho' it would be now finished in a few Hours, I will do so still; and remove this hated poor Pamela out of your House and Sight for ever.

Mrs. Fervis said he; not speaking to me, I believe this little Slut has the Power of Witchcraft, if ever there was a Witch; for she inchants all that come near her. She makes even you, who should know better what the Worldis, think her an Angel of Light.

I offered to go away; for I believe he wanted me to ask to stay in my Place, for all this his great Wrath; and he said, Stay here! stay here, when I bid you! and snatched my Hand. I trembled, and said, I will! I will! for he hurt my Fingers, he grasped me so hard.

He

He seemed to have a mind to say something to me; but broke off abruptly, and said Begone! And away I tripped as sast as I could; and he and Mrs. Jervis had a deal of Talk, as she told me; and among the rest, he expressed himself vexed to have spoken in

Mr. Jonathan's Hearing.

Now you must know, that Mr. Jonathan, our Butler, is a very grave good fort of old Man, with his Hair as white as Silver! and an honest worthy Man he is. I was hurrying out with a Flea in my Ear, as the saying is, and going down Stairs into the Parlour, met him. He took hold of my Hand (in a gentler manner, tho', than my Master) with both his; and he said, Ah! sweet, sweet Mrs. Paneta! what is it I heard just now!—I am forry at my Heart; but I am sure I will sooner believe anybody in sault than you. Thank you, Mr. Jonathan, said I; but as you value your Place, don't be seen speaking to such a one as me. I cried too; and slipt, away as sast as I could from him, for his own sake, lest he should be seen to pity me.

And now I will give you an Instance how much

I am in Mr. Lengman's Esteem also.

I had lost my Pen some-how; and my Paper being written out, I stepped to Mr. Longman's our Steward's Office, to beg him to give me a Pen or two, and a Sheet or two of Paper. He said, Ay, that I will, my Sweet Maiden! and gave me three Pens, some Wasers, a Stick of Wax, and twelve Sheets of Paper; and coming from his Desk, where he was writing, he said, let me have a Word or two with you, my sweet little Mistress (for so these two good old Gentlemen often call me; for I believe they love me dearly): I hear bad News; that we are going to lose you: I hope it is not true? Yes, it is, Sir, said I; but I was in hopes it would not be known till I went away.

What

What a D—l, said he, ails our Master of late! I never saw such an Alteration in any Man in my Life! He is pleased with nobody, as I see; and by what Mr. fonathan tells me just now, he was quite out of the way with you. What could you have done to him, tro'? Only Mrs. Fervis is a very good Woman, or I should have seared she had been

your Enemy.

No, faid I, nothing like it. Mrs. Fervis is a just good Woman, and next to my Father and Mother, the best Friend I have in the World .-Well, then, faid he, it must be worse. Shall I guess? You are too pretty, my sweet Mistress, and, may-be, too virtuous. Ah! have I not hit it? No, good Mr. Longman, faid I, don't think any-thing amiss of my Master; he is cross and angry with me indeed, that's true; but I may have given Occasion for it, possibly; and because I am desirous to go to my Father and Mother, rather than stay here, perhaps he may think me ungrateful. But, you know, Sir, faid I, that a Father and Mother's Comfort is the dearest thing to a good Child that can be. Sweet Excellence! faid he, this becomes you; but I know the World and Mankind too well; tho' I must hear, and see, and say nothing! And a Bleffing attend my little Sweeting, faid he, where-ever you go! And away went I with a Curt'sy and Thanks.

Now this pleases one, my dear Father and Mother, to be so beloved.—How much better, by good Fame and Integrity, is it to get every one's good Word but one, than, by pleasing that one, to make every one else one's Enemy, and be an execrable

a coy and that also was en

ous & Woman of Difference

Creature besides! I am, &c.

LETTER XXIII.

My dear Father and Mother,

W E had a great many neighbouring Gentlemen, and their Ladies, this Day at Dinner; and my Master made a fine Entertainment for them: And Isaac, and Mr. Fonathan, and Benjamin, waited at Table: And Isaac tells Mrs. Fervis, that the Ladies will by-and-by come to see the House, and have the Curosity to see me; for it seems, they said to my Master, when the Jokes slew about, Well, Mr. B. we understand, you have a Servant-maid, who is the greatest Beauty in the County; and we promise ourselves to see her before we go.

The Wench is well enough, said he; but no such Beauty as you talk of, I'll assure ye. She was my Mother's Waiting-Maid, who, on her Death-bed, engaged me to be kind to her. She is young, and

every-thing is pretty that is young.

Ay, ay, faid one of the Ladies, that's true; but if your Mother had not recommended her so strongly, there is so much Merit in Beauty, that I make no doubt such a fine Gentleman would have wanted

no Inducement to be kind to it.

They all laugh'd at my Master: And he, it seems, laugh'd for Company; but said, I don't know how it is, but I see with different Eyes from other People; for I have heard much more Talk of her Prettiness, than I think it deserves: She is well enough, as I said; but her greatest Excellence is, that she is humble, and courteous, and faithful, and makes all her Fellow-servants love her: My Housekeeper, in particular, doats upon her; and you know, Ladies, she is a Woman of Discernment: And, as for Mr. Langman, and Jonathan, here, if they thought them-

themselves young enough, I am told, they would fight for her. Is it not true Jonathan? Troth, Sir, said he, an't please your Honour, I never knew her Peer, and all your Honour's Family are of the same Mind. Do you hear now? said my Master.—Well, said the Ladies, we will make a Visit to Mrs. Jervis by and-by, and hope to see this Paragon.

I believe they are coming; and will tell you the rest by-and-by. I wish they had come, and were gone. Why can't they make their Game without

me?

Well, these fine Ladies have been here, and are gone back again. I would have been absent, if I could, and did step into the Closet; so they saw me when they came in.

There were four of them, Lady Arthur at the great white House on the Hill, Lady Brooks, Lady Towers, and the other, it seems, a Countess, of

fome hard Name, I forget what.

So, Mrs. Fervis, says one of the Ladies, how do you do? We are all come to inquire after your Health. I am much obliged to your Ladyships, said Mrs. Fervis: Will your Ladyships please to sit down? But said the Counters, we are not anly come to ask after Mrs. Fervis's Health neither; but we are come to see a Rarity besides. Ay, says Lady Arthur, I have not seen your Pamela these two Years, and they tell me she is grown wondrous pretty in that Time.

Then I wished I had not been in the Closet; for when I came out, they must needs know I heard them; but I have often found, that bashful Bodies owe themselves a Spite, and frequently confound themselves more, by endeavouring to avoid Consusion.

Why, yes, fays Mr. Fervis, Pamela is very pretty indeed; the's but in the Closet there:—Pamela, pray

ftep hither. I came out, all covered with Blushes

and they smiled at one another.

The Countess took me by the Hand: Why, indeed, she was pleased to say, Report has not been too lavish, I'll assure you. Don't be ashamed, Child (and stared full in my Face); I wish I had just such a Face to be asham'd of. O how like a Fool I look'd!

Lady Arthur said, Ay, my good Pamela, I say as her Ladyship says: Don't be so confused; tho' indeed it becomes you too. I think your good Lady departed made a sweet Choice of such a pretty Attendant. She would have been mighty proud of you, as she always was praising you, had she liv'd till now.

Ah! Madam, said Lady Brooks, do you think that so dutiful a Son as our Neighbour, who always admir'd what his Mother lov'd, does not pride himself, for all what he said at Table, in such a pretty Maiden?

She looked with fuch a malicious fneering Coun-

tenance, I can't abide her.

Lady Towers said, with a free Air (for it seems she is called a Wit), Well, Mrs. Panela, I can't say I like you so well as these Ladies do; for I should never care, if you were my Servant, to have you and your Master in the same House together. Then they all set up a great Laugh.

Throw what I could have faid if I durst. But they are Ladies—and Ladies may say any-thing.

Says Lady Towers, can the pretty Image speak, Mrs. Jervis? I vow she has speaking Eyes! O you little Rogue, said she, and tapped me on the Cheek, you seem born to undo, or to be undone!

God forbid, and please your Ladyship, said I, it should be either!—I beg, said I, to withdraw; for the Sense I have of my Unworthiness renders me

unfit for fuch a Prefence.

I then went away, with one of my best Curt's fies; and Lady Towers said, as I went out, prettily said, I vow!

I vow!—And Lady Brooks faid, See that Shape! I never faw fuch a Face and Shape in my Life; why she must be better descended than you have told me!

And so they ran on for half an Hour more, in my Praises, as I was told; and glad was I, when I

got out of the Hearing of them.

But, it seems, they went down with such a Story to my Master, and so full of me, that he had much ado to stand it; but as it was very little to my Reputation, I am sure I could take no Pride in it; and I seared it would make no better for me. This gives me another Cause for wishing myself out of this House.

This is Thursday Morning, and next Thursday I hope to set out; for I have finished my Task, and my Master is horrid cross! And I am vexed his Crossness affects me so. If ever he had any Kindness towards me, I believe he now hates me hear-

tily.

Is it not strange, that Love borders so much upon Hate? but this wicked Love is not like the true virtuous Love, to be sure: That and Hatred must be as far off, as Light and Darkness. And how must this Hate have been increased, if he had met with a base Compliance, after his wicked Will had

been gratified?

Well, one may fee by a little, what a great deal means. For if Innocence cannot attract common Civility, what must Guilt expect, when Novelty has ceased to have its Charms, and Changeableness had taken place of it? Thus we read in Holy Writ, that wicked Amnon, when he had ruined poor Tamar, hated her more than ever he loved her, and would have turned her out of Door.

How happy am I, to be turned out of Door, with that fweet Companion my Innocence!——O may that

that be always my Companion! And while I prefume not upon my own Strength, and am willing to avoid the Tempter, I hope the Divine Grace will affift me.

Forgive me, that I repeat in my Letter Part of my hourly Prayer. I owe every-thing, next to God's Goodness, to your Piety and good Examples, my dear Parents, my dear poor Parents! I say that Word with Pleasure; for your Poverty is my Pride,

as your Integrity shall be my Imitation.

As foon as I have dined, I will put on my new Cloaths. I long to have them on. I know I shall surprise Mrs. Fervis with them; for she shan't see me till I am sull-dressed.—Fohn is come back, and I'll soon send you some of what I have written.—I find he is going early in the Morning; and so I'll close here, that I am

Your most dutiful Daughter.

Don't lose your Time in meeting me; because I am so uncertain. It is hard if, some-how or other, I can't get a Passage to you. But may-be my Master won't resuse to let John bring me. I can ride behind him, I believe, well enough; for he is very careful, and very honest; and you know John as well as I; for he loves you both. Besides, may-be, Mrs. Jervis can put me in some way.

LETTER XXIV.

Dear Father and Mother,

I Shall write on, as long as I stay, tho' I should have nothing but Silliness to write; for I know you divert yourselves on Nights with what I write, because it is mine. John tells me how much you long

long for my coming; but he fays, he told you he

hoped fomething would happen to hinder it.

I am glad you did not tell him the Occasion of my coming away; for if my Fellow-servants should guess, it were better so, than to have it from you or me: Besides, I really am concerned, that my Master should cast away a Thought upon such a poor Creature as me; for, besides the Disgrace, it has quite turned his Temper; and I begin to believe what Mrs. Fervis told me, that he likes me, and can't help it; and yet strives to conquer it, and so finds no way but to be cross to me.

Don't think me prefumptuous and conceited; for it is more my Concern than my Pride, to see such a Gentleman so demean himself, and lessen the Regard he used to have in the Eyes of all his Servants, on my Account.—But I am to tell you of my

new Dress to day.

And fo, when I had dined, up stairs I went, and locked myself into my little Room. There I tricked myself up as well as I could in my new Garb, and put on my round-ear'd ordinary Cap; but with a green Knot however, and my home-spun Gown and Petticoat, and plain Leather-shoes; but yet they are what they call Spanish Leather; and my ordinary Hose, ordinary I mean to what I have been lately used to; tho' I shall think good Yarn may do very well for every Day, when I come home. A plain Muslin Tucker I put on, and my black Silk Necklace, instead of the French Necklace my Lady gave me; and put the Ear-rings out of my Ears; and when I was quite 'quipped, I took my Straw-hat in my Hand, with its two blue Strings, and looked about me in the Glass, as proud as any thing—To fay Truth, I never liked myself so well in my Life.

O the Pleasure of descending with Ease, Innocence, and Resignation !- Indeed there is nothing like it! An humble Mind, I plainly fee, cannot meet with any very shocking Disappointment, let Fortune's Wheel turn round as it will,

So I went down to look for Mrs. Fervis, to fee

how the liked me.

I met, as I was upon the Stairs, our Rachel, who is the House-maid; and she made me a low Curt'sy, and I found did not know me. So I smiled, and went to the Housekeeper's Parlour: And there sat good Mrs. Fervis at Work, making a Shift: And would you believe it? The did not know me at first; but rose up, and pulled off her Spectacles; and said, Do you want me, forfooth? I could not help laughing, and faid, Hey-day! Mrs. Fervis, what! don't you know me?—She stood all in Amaze, and look'd at me from Top to Toe: Why, you surprise me, faid she; what! Pamela! thus metamorphos'd! How came this about?

As it happened, in stept my Master; and my Back being to him, he thought it was a Stranger speaking to Mrs. Fervis, and withdrew again; and did not hear her ask, If his Honour had any Commands for her?—She turned me about and about, and 1 shewed her all my Dress, to my Under-petticoat; and the faid, fitting down, Why, I am all in Amaze. I must fit down. What can all this mean? I told her, I had no Cloaths fuitable to my Condition when I returned to my Father's; and so it was better to begin here, as I was foon to go away, that all my Fellow-fervants might fee I km w how to fuit myfelf

to the State I was returning to.

Well, faid she, I never knew the like of thee. But this fad Preparation for going away (for now I fee you are quite in earnest) is what I know not how to get over. O my dear Pamela, how can I part with you!

My Master rung in the Back-Parlour, and so I withdrew, and Mrs. Fervis went to attend him. It seems. feems he said to her, I was coming in to let you know that I shall go to Linc: Inshire, and possibly to my Sister Davers's, and be absent some Weeks. But, pray, what pretty neat Damsel was with you? She says, she siniled, and asked, If his Honour did not know who it was? No, said he, I never saw her before. Farmer Nichols, or Farmer Brady, have neither of them such a tight prim Lass for a Daughter; have they?—Tho' I did not see her Face neither, said he. If your Honour won't be angry, said she, I will introduce her into your Presence; for, I think, says she, she outdoes our Pamela.

Now I did not thank her for this, as I told her afterwards (for it brought a great deal of Trouble upon me, as well as Crossness, as you shall hear). That can't be, he was pleased to say. But if you

can find an Excuse for it, let her come in.

At that she stept to me, and told me, I must go in with her to my Master; but, said she, for Goodness sake, let him find you out; for he don't know you. O sie, Mrs. Fervis, said I, how could you serve me so? Besides, it looks too free both in me, and to him. I tell you, said she, you shall come in; and pray don't reveal yourself till he finds you out.

So I went in, foolish as I was; the I must have been seen by him another time, if I had not then. And she would make me take my Straw-hat in my

Hand.

I dropt a low Curt'sy, but said never a Word. I dare say he knew me as soon as he saw my Face but was as cunning as Lucifer. He came up to me, and took me by the Hand, and said, Whose pretty Maiden are you?——I dare say you are Pamela's Sister, you are so like her. So neat, so clean, so pretty! Why, Child, you far surpass your Sister Pamela!

I was all Confusion, and would have spoken; but he took me about the Neck: Why, said he, you are very pretty, Child: I would not be so free with your Sister, you may believe; but I must kiss you.

O Sir, said I, I am Pamela, indeed I am: Indeed

I am Pamela, ber own self!

He kissed me for all I could do; and said, Impossible! you are a lovelier Girl by half than Pamela; and sure I may be innocently free with you, tho' I would not do her so much Fayour.

This was a fad Trick upon me indeed, and what I could not expect; and Mrs. Fervis looked like a Fool as much as I, for her Officiousness.—At last I got away, and ran out of the parlour, most fadly

vexed, as you may well think.

He talked a good deal to Mrs. Fervis, and at last ordered me to come in to him. Come in, said he, you little Villain! for so he called me? good Sirs! what a Name was there! who is it you put your Tricks won? I was resolved never to honour your Unworthiness, said he, with so much Notice again; and so you must disguise yourself, to attract me, and yet pretend, like an Hypocrite as you are—

I was out of Patience, then: Hold, good Sir, faid I; don't impute Disguise and Hypocrisy to me, above all things; for I hate them both, mean as I am. I have put on no Disguise.—What a plague, said he, for that was his Word, do you mean then by this Dress?—Why, and please your Honour, said I, I mean one of the honestest Things in the World. I have been in Disguise indeed ever since my good Lady your Mother took me from my poor Parents. I came to her Ladyship so poor and mean, that these Cloaths I have on, are a princely Suit to those I had then: And her Goodness heaped upon me rich Cloaths, and other Bounties: And as I am now returning to my poor Parents again so soon, I cannot

cannot wear those good things without being whooted at; and so have brought what will be more suitable to my Degree, and be a good Holiday-suit too,

when I get home.

He then took me in his Arms, and presently pushed me from him. Mrs. Jervis, said he, take the little Witch from me; I can neither bear, nor for-bear her! (Strange Words these!)—But stay; you shan't go!—Yet begone!---No, come back again.

I thought he was mad for my Share; for he knew not what he would have. I was going, however; but he stept after me, and took hold of my Arm, and brought me in again: I am sure he made my Arm black and blue; for the Marks are upon it still. Sir, Sir, said I, pray have Merey; I will,

I will come in !

He fat down, and look'd at me, and, as I thought afterwards, as fillily as fuch a poor Girl as I. At last, he said, Well, Mrs. Fervis, as I was telling you, you may permit her to flay a little longer, till I see if my Sister Davers will have her; if, mean time, she humble herself, and ask this as a Favour, and is forry for her Pertness, and the Liberty she has taken with my Character out of the House, and in the House. Your Honour indeed told me so, said Mrs. Jervis; but I never found her inclinable to Think herself in a Fault. Pride and Perverseness, faid he, with a Vengeance! Yet this is your Doating-piece!---Well for once, I'll submit myself, to tell you, Huffy, faid he to me, you may stay a Fortnight longer, till I see my Sister Davers : Do you hear what I fay to you, Statue! Can you neither speak nor be thankful?---Your Honour frights me so, said I, that I can hardly speak: But I will venture to fay, that I have only to beg, as a Favour, that I may go to my Father and Mother-Why

Fool, said he, won't you like to go to wait on my Sister Davers? Sir, said I, I was once fond of that Honour; but you were pleased to say, I might be in danger from her Ladyship's Nephew, or he from me.--D--d Impertinence! said he; do you hear, Mrs. Jervis, do you hear, how she retorts upon me? Was ever such matchless Assurance!—

I then fell a weeping; for Mrs. Fervis faid, Fie, Pamela, fie! --- And I faid, My Lot is very hard indeed! I am fure I would hurt nobody; and I have been, it feems, guilty of Indifcretions, which have cost me my Place, and my Master's Favour, and so have been turned away: And when the Time is come, that I should return to my poor Parents, I am not suffered to go quietly. Good your Honour, what have I done, that I must be used worse than if I had robbed you !---Robbed me! faid he, why fo you have, Huffy; you have robbed me. Who! I, Sir! faid I; have I robbed you? Why then you are a Justice of Peace, and may fend me to Gaol, if you please, and bring me to a Tryal for my Life! If you can prove that I have robbed you, I am fure I ought to die.

Now I was quite ignorant of his Meaning; tho' I did not like it, when it was afterwards explained, neither; and, well, thought I, what will this come to at last, if poor Pamela is esteemed a Thief! Then I thought, in an Instant, how I should shew my Face to my honest poor Parents, if I was but

suspected.

But, Sir, said I, let me ask you but one question, and pray don't let me be called Names for it; for I don't mean disrespectfully: Why, if I have done amis, am I not left to be discharged by your House-keeper, as the other Maids have been? And if fance or Rachel, or Hannah, were to offend, would your Honour stoop to take notice of them? And why should

fhould you so demean yourself to take notice of me? Pray, Sir, if I have not been worse than others, why should I suffer more than others? and why should I not be turned away, and there's an End of it? For indeed I am not of Consequence enough for my Master to concern himself, and be angry about such a Creature as me.

Do you hear Mrs. Fervis, cry'd he again, how pertly I am interrogated by this faucy Slut? Why, Sauce-box, fays he, did not my good Mother defire me to take care of you? And have you not been always distinguished by me, above a common Servant? And does your Ingratitude upbraid me for this?

I said something mutteringly, and he vowed he would hear it. I begged Excuse; but he insisted upon it. Why then, said I, if you. Honour must know, I said, That my good Lady did ont desire your Care to extend to the Summer-house, and her Dressing-room.

Well, this was a little faucy, you'll fay—And he flew into such a Passion, that I was forced to run for it; and Mrs. Jervis said, It was happy I got

out of the Way.

t

Ī

C .

ır

iy

ld

Why what makes him provoke one so, then?--I'm almost sorry for it; but I would be glad to get away at any rate. For I begin to be more fearful now.

Just now Mr. Jonathan sent me these Lines---

(Blefs me! what shall I do?)

"Dear Mrs. Pamela, Take care of yourfelf; for Rachel heard my Master say to Mrs. Jervis, who,

" fhe believes, was pleading for you, Say no more,

" Mrs, Fervis; for by G ___ I will have her.

" Burn this instantly."

O pray for your poor Daughter. I am called to go to-bed by Mrs. Jervis, for it is past Eleven; and I am sure she shall hear of it; for all this is owing to

her,

her, tho' she did not mean any Harm. But I have been, and am, in a Strange Fluster; and I suppose too, she'll fay, I have been full pert.

O my dear Father and Mother, Power and Riches never want Advocates! But poor Gentlewoman, she cannot live without him: And he has

been very good to her.

So Good-night. May-be I shall send this in the Morning; but may-be not; fo won't conclude: Tho' I can't fay too often, that I am (though with great Apprehention)

Your most dutiful Daughter.

LETTER XXV.

My dear Parents,

Let me take up my Complaint, and fay, Never was poor Creature fo unhappy, and fo barbaroufly used, as poor Pamela! Indeed, my dear Father and Mother, my Heart's just broke! I can neither write as I should do, nor let it alone; for to whom but you can I vent my Griefs, and keep my poor heart from bursting! Wicked, wicked, Man!—I have no Patience when I think of him! -But yet, don't be frighted-for-I hope-I hope, I am honest !- But if my Head and my Hand will let me, you shall hear all .- Is there no Constable nor Headborough, tho', to take me out of his House? for I am fure I can fafely fwear the Peace against him: But, alas! he is greater than any Constable: He is a Justice himself; such a Justice deliver me from !-But God Almighty, I hope, in Time will right me !- For he knows the Innocence of my Heart!

John went your way in the Morning; but I have been too much distracted to send by him; and have feen

seen nobody but Mrs. Jervis, or Rachel, and one I hate to see or be seen by: And indeed I hate now to fee any body. Strange things I have to tell you, that happened fince last Night, that good Mr. Jonathan's Letter, and my Master's Harshness, put me

into fuch a Fluster, but I will not keep you in suspence. I went to Mrs. Fervis's Chamber; and, O dreadful! my wicked Master had hid himself, base Gentleman as he is! in her Closet, where she has a few Books, and Chest of Drawers, and such-like. little suspected it; tho' I used, till this sad Night, always to look into that Closet, and another in the Room, and under the Bed ever fince the Summer-house Trick, but never found any-thing; and fo I did not do it then, being fully refolved to be angry with Mrs. Fervis for what had happened in the Day, and fo

thought of nothing elfe.

n

1

p

!

e,

le

?

ist

e:

rer

ne

of

ve

ve en

I fat myself down on one Side of the Bed, and she on the other, and we began to undress ourselves; but the on that Side next the wicked Closet, that held the worst Heart in the World. So, said Mrs. Jervis, you won't speak to me, Pamela! I find you are angry with me. Why, Mrs. Fervis, faid I, so I am, a little; 'tis a Folly to deny it. You see what I have suffered by your forcing me in to my Master: And a Gentlewoman of your Years and Experience must needs know, that it was not fit for me to pretend to be any body else for my own

fake, nor with regard to my Master.

But, faid she, who would have thought it would have turned out so? Ay, said I, little thinking who heard me, Lucifer always is ready to promote his own Work and Workmen. You fee, prefently, what Use he made of it, pretending not to know me, on purpose to be free with me. And when he took upon himself to know me, to quarrel with me, and use me hardly: And you too, faid I, to cry, Fie, fie,

Pamela!

Pamela! cut me to the Heart: For that encouraged him.

Do you think, my Dear, faid she, that I would encourage him?—I never said so to you before; but since you have forced it from me, I must tell you, that ever since you consulted me, I have used my utmost Endeavours to divert him from his wicked Purposes: And he has promised fair; but, to say all in a Word, he doats upon you; and I begin to see it is not in his Power to help it.

I luckily said nothing of the Note from Mr. Fonathan; for I began to suspect all the World almost: But I said, to try Mrs. Fervis, Well then, what would you have me do? You see he is for having me

wait on Lady Davers now.

Why, I'll tell you freely, my dear Pamela, faid she, and I trust to your Discretion to conceal what I say: My Master has been often desiring me to put

you upon asking him to let you stay-

Yes, faid I, Mrs. Fervis, let me interrupt you: I will tell you why I could not think of that: It was not the Pride of my Heart; but the Pride of my Honesty: For what must have been the Case? Here my Master has been very rude to me, once and twice; and you fay he cannot help it, tho' he pretends to be forry for it : Well, he has given me Warning to leave my Place, and uses me very harshly; perhaps, to frighten me to his Purposes, as he supposes I would be fond of staying (as indeed I should, if I could be fafe; for I love you and all the House, and value him, if he would act as my Master.) Well then, as I know his Designs, and that he owns he cannot help it; must I not have ask'd to stay, knowing he would attempt me again? for all you could affure me of, was, he would do nothing by Force; fo I, a poor weak Girl was to be left to my own Strength! And was not this

encourage him to go on in his wicked Devices?—
How then, Mrs. fervis, could I alk or wish to

ftav?

You fay well, my dear Child, fays she; and you have a Justness of Thought above your Years; and for all these Considerations, and for what I have heard this Day, after you ran away (and I am glad you went as you did), I cannot persuade you to stay; and I shall be glad, which is what I never thought I could have faid, that you were well at your Father's: for if Lady Davers will entertain you, the may as well have you from thence as here. There's my good Mrs. Fervis! faid I; God will bless you for your good Counsel to a poor Maiden, that is hard befet. But pray what did he fay, when I was gone? Why, fays she, he was very angry with you. But he would hear it! faid I: I think it was a little bold; but then he provoked me to it. And had not my Honesty been in the Case, I would not by any Means have been so saucy. Besides, Mrs. Fervis, consider it was the Truth; if he does not love to hear of the Summer-house, and the Dreffing-room, why should he not be ashamed to continue in the fame Mind? But faid she, when you have muttered this to yourfelf, you might have told him any-thing else. Well, said I, I cannot tell a wilful Lye, and fo there's an End of it. But I find you now give him up, and think there's Danger in staying,-Lord bless me! I wish I was well out of the House; so it was at the Bottom of a wet Ditch, on the wildest Common in England. I ship ner bas berestot

Why, faid the, it fignifies nothing to tell you all he faid; but it was enough to make me fear you would not be so safe as I could wish; and, upon my Word, Pamela, I don't wonder he loves you; for, Vol. I.

without Flattery, you are a charming Girl! and I never faw you look more lovely in my Life than in that fame new Drefs of yours. And then it was fuch a Surprize upon us all!—I believe truly, you owe fome of your Danger to the lovely Appearance you made. Then, faid I, I wish the Cloaths in the Fire: I expected no Effect from them; but if any, a quite contrary one.

Hush! said I, Mrs. Fervis, did you not hear something stir in the Closet? No, silly Girl; said she; your Fears are always awake.—But indeed, said I, I think I heard something rustle—May-be, says she, the Cat may be got there: But I hear nothing.

I was hush; but she said, Pr'ythee, my good Girl, make haste to-bed. See if the Door be fast. So I did, and was thinking to look into the Closet; but, hearing no more Noise thought it needless, and so went again and sat myself down on the Bed-side, and went on undressing myself. And Mrs. Fervis, being by this Time undressed, stepped into Bed, and

bid me haften, for the was fleepy.

I don't know what was the Matter; but my Heart fadly misgave me: Indeed, Mr. Jonathan's Note was enough to make it do so, with what Mrs. Jervis had said. I pulled off my Stays, and my Stockens, and all my Cloaths to an Under-petticoat; and then hearing a Rustling again in the Closet, I said, Heaven protect us! But before I say my Prayers, I must look into this Closet. And so was going to it slip-shod, when, O dreadful! out rushed my Master, in a rich Silk and Silver Morning Gown.

I screamed, and ran to the Bed; and Mrs. Fervis screamed too; and he said, I'll do you no Harm, if you sorbear this Noise; but otherwise take what

follows.

Instantly

Instantly he came to the Bed (for I had crept into it, to Mrs. Fervis, with my Coat on, and ney Shoes); and taking me in his Arms, said, Mrs. Fervis, rise, and just step up-stairs, to keep the Maids from coming down at this Noise: I'll do no Harm to this Rebel.

O, for Heaven's fake! for Pity's fake! Mrs. Jervis, said I, if I am not betrayed, don't leave me; and, I beseech you, raise all the House. No, said Mrs. Jervis, I will not stir, my dear Lamb; I will not leave you. I wonder at you, Sir, said she; and kindly threw herself upon my Coat, clasping me round the Waist: You shall not hurt this Innocent, said she; for I will lose my Life in her Desence. Are there not, said she, enough wicked ones in the World, for your base Purpose, but you must attempt such a Lamb as this?

He was desperate angry, and threatened to throw her out of the Window; and to turn her out of the House the next Morning. You need not, Sir, said she; for I will not stay in it. God defend my poor Pamela till to-morrow, and we will both go together.—Says he, let me but expostulate a Word or two with you, Pamela. Pray, Pamela, said Mrs. Jervis, don't hear a Word, except he leaves the Bed, and goes to the other End of the Room. Ay, out of the Room, said I; expossulate to-morrow, if you must expossulate!

I found his Hand in my Bosom, and when my. Fright let me know it, I was ready to die; and I tighed and screamed, and fainted away. And still he had his Arms about my Neck; and Mrs. Jerus was about my Feet, and upon my Coat. And all in a cold dewy Sweat was I, Pamela! Pamela! faid Mrs. Jeruis, as she tells me since, O—h, and gave another Shriek, my poor Pamela is dead for certain!—And so, to be sure, I was for a Time;

for I knew nothing more of the Matter, one Fit following another, till about three Hours after, as it proved to be, I found myself in Bed, and Mrs. Fervis setting up on one Side, with her Wrapper about her, and Rachel on the other; and no Master, for the wicked Wretch was gone. But I was so overjoyed, that I hardly could believe myself; and I said, which were my first Words, Mrs. Fervis, Mrs. Rachel, can I be sure it is you? Tell me! can I?—Where have I been? Hush, my Dear, said Mrs. Fervis; you have been in Fit after Fit. I

never faw any-body fo frightful in my Life!

By this I judged Rachel knew nothing of the Matter; and it feems my wicked Mafter had, upon Mrs. Fervis's second Noise of my fainting away, flipt out, and, as if he had come from his own Chamber, diffurbed by the Screaming, went up to the Maids Room (who, hearing the Noise, lay trembling, and afraid to stir), and bid them go down and see what was the Matter with Mrs. Fervis and me. And he charged Mrs. Fervis, and promised to forgive her for what she had said and done, if she would conceal the Matter. So the Maids came down; and all went up again, when I came to myfelf a little, except Rachel, who staid to fit up with me, and bear Mrs. Jervis Company. I believe they all guess the Matter to be bad enough; though they dare not fay any-thing.

When I think of my Danger, and the Freedoms he actually took, though I believe Mrs. Fervis faved me from worse, and she says she did (though what can I think, who was in a Fit, and knew nothing of

the Matter?) I am almost distracted.

At first I was afraid of Mrs. Jervis; but I am fully satisfied she is very good, and I should have been lost but for her; and she takes on grievously about it. What would have become of me, had she gone

gone out of the Room, to still the Maids, as he bid her? He'd certainly have shut her out, and then, Mercy on me! what would have become of your poor Pamela?

I must leave off a little; for my Eyes and my Head are sadly bad.—This was a dreadful Trial! This was the worst of all! Oh! that I was out of the Power of this dreadfully wicked Man! Pray for

Your distressed Daughter.

LETTER XXV.

My dear Father and Mother,

DID not rife till Ten o'Clock, and I had all the Concerns and Wishes of the Family, and Multitudes of Inquiries about me. My wicked Master went out early to hunt; but left Word he would be in to Breakfast. And so he was.

He came up to our Chamber about Eleven, and had nothing to do to be forry; for he was our Master, and so put on sharp Anger at first.

I had great Emotions at his entering the Room, and threw my Apron over my Head, and fell a crying, as if my Heart would break.

Mrs. Fervis, said he, since I know you, and you me so well, I don't know how we shall live together for the future. Sir, said she, I will take the Liberty to say, what I think is best for both. I have so much Grief, that you should attempt to do any Injury to this poor Girl; and especially in my Chamber, that I should think myself accessary to the Mischief, if I was not to take notice of it. Tho' my Ruin therefore may depend upon it, I desire not to stay; but pray let poor Pamela and me go together. With all my Heart, said he; and the sooner the better. She fell a crying. I find, says he, this

Girl has made a Party of the whole House in her Favour against me. Her Innocence deserves it of us all, faid the very kindly: And I never could have thought that the Son of my dear good Lady departed could have so forfeited his Honour, as to endeavour to destroy a Virtue he ought to protect. No more of this, Mrs. Fervis! faid he; I will not bear it. As for Pamela, the has a lucky Knack of falling into lits, when the pleases. But the cursed Yellings of you both made me not myself. I intended no Harm to her, as I told you both, if you'd have left your Squallings: And I did no Harm neither, but to myself; for I raised a Hornet's Nest a out my Ears, that, as far as I know, may have flung to Death my Reputation. Sir, said Mrs. Fervis, then I beg Mr. Longman may take my Accounts, and I will go away as foon as I can. As for Pamela, the is at her Liberty, I hope, to go away next Thursday, as she intends?

I fat still; for I could not speak nor look up, and his Presence discomposed me extremely; but I was sorry to hear myself the unhappy Occasion of Mrs. Fervis's Losing her Place, and hope that may be

Itill made up.

Well, said he, let Mr. Longman make up your Accounts, as soon as you will; and Mrs. Jewkes (who is his Housekeeper in Lincolnshire) shall come hither in your Place, and won't be less obliging, I dare say, than you have been. Said she, I have never disoblig'd you till now; and let me tell you, Sir, if you knew what belonged to your own Reputation or Honour—No more, no more, said he, of these antiquated Topics. I have been no bad Friend to you; and I shall always esteem you, tho' you have not been so faithful to my Secrets, as I could have wish'd, and have laid me open to this Girl, which has made her more assaid of me than she had occasion. Well,

Sir, said she, after what passed Yesterday, and last Night, I think I went rather too far in favour of your Injunctions than otherwise; and I should have deserved every body's Censure, as the basest of Creatures, had I been capable of contributing to your lawless Attempts. Still, Mrs. Jervis, still reslecting upon me, and all for imaginary Faults! for what Harm have I done the Girl?—I won't bear it, I'll assure you. But yet, in respect to my Mother, I am willing to part friendly with you: Tho' you ought both of you to reslect on the Freedom of your Conversation, in relation to me; which I should have resented more than I do, but that I am conscious I had no Business to demean myself so as to be in your Closet, where I might have expected to hear a Multitude of Impertinence between you.

Well, Sir, said she, you have no Objection, I hope, to Pamela's going away on Thursday next? You are mighty solicitous, said he, about Pamela: But, no, not I; let her go as soon as she will: She is a naughty Girl, and has brought all this upon hersels; and upon me more Trouble than she can have had from me: But I have overcome it all, and

will never concern myfelf about her.

d

٧

dI

d

I have a Proposal made me, added he, since I have been out this Morning, that I shall go near to embrace; and so wish only, that a discreet Use may be made of what is past; and there's an End of everything with me, as to Pamela, I'll assure you.

I class'd my Hands together thro' my Apron, overjoyed at this, tho' I was soon to go away: For, naughty as he has been to me, I wish his Prosperity with all my Heart, for my good old Lady's sake.

Well, Pamela, faid he, you need not now be afraid to speak to me; tell me what you listed up your Hands at? I said not a Word. Says he, If you like what I have said, give me your Hand upon

E 4

it. I held my Hand upon my Apron; for I could not speak to him; and he took hold of it, and pressed it, though less hard than he did my Arm the Day before. What does the little Fool cover her Face for? said he: Pull your Apron away; and let me see how you look, after your Freedom of Speech of me last Night. No Wonder you're ashamed to see me. You know you were very free with my Character.

I could not stand this barbarous Insult, as I took it to be, considering his Behaviour to me; and I then spoke and said, O the Difference between the Minds of thy Creatures, good God! How shall some be cast down in their Innocence, while others

can triumph in their Guilt!

And so saying, I went up-stairs to my Chamber, and wrote all this; for though he vexed me at his taunting, yet I was pleased to hear he was likely to be married, and that his wicked Intentions were so happily overcome as to me; and this made me a little easier. And I hope I have passed the worst; or else it is very hard. And yet I shan't think my-self at ease quite, till I am with you: For methinks, after all, his Repentance and Amendment are mighty suddenly resolved upon. But the Divine Grace is not confined to Space; and Remorse may, and I hope has smitten him to the Heart at once, for his Injuries to poor me! Yet I won't be too secure neither.

Having Opportunity, I fend now what I know will grieve you to the Heart. But I hope I shall bring my next Scribble myself; and so conclude,

Light anion flat

tho' half broken hearted,

Your ever-dutiful Daughter.

LETTER XXVI.

Dear Father and Mother,

TAM glad I defired you not to meet me, and John fays you won't; for he told you, he is fure I shall get a Passage well enough, either behind some one of my Fellow-Servants on horseback, or by Farmer Nichols's Means: But as to the Chariot he talked to you of, I can't expect that Favour, to be fure; and I should not care for it, because it would look fo much above me. But Farmer Brady, they fay, has a Chaife with one Horse, and we hope to borrow that, or hire it rather than fail; tho' Money runs a little lowish, after what I have laid out; but I don't care to fay fo here; tho' I warrant I might have what I would of Mrs. Fervis, or Mr. Jonathan, or Mr. Longman; but then how shall I pay it? you'll fay: And besides, I don't love to be beholden.

But the chief Reason I'm glad you don't set out to meet me, is the Uncertainty; for it seems I must stay another Week still, and hope certainly to go Thursday after. For poor Mrs. Jervis will go at the same Time, she says, and can't be ready before.

Oh! that I was once well with you!—Tho' he is very civil too at present, and not so cross as he was; and yet he is as vexatious another way, as you shall hear. For Yesterday he had a rich Suit of Cloaths brought home, which they call a Birth-day Suit; for he intends to go to London against next Birth-day, to see the Court, and our Folks will have it he is to be made a Lord.—I wish they may make him an honest Man, as he was always thought; but I have not found it so, Alas for me!

And so, as I was faying, he had these Cloaths come home, and he tried them on. And before he pulled

pulled them off, he fent for me, when nobody else was in the Parlour with him: Pamela, said he, you are so neat and so nice in your own Dress (Alack-aday, I did'n't know I was!), that you must be a Judge of ours. How are these Cloaths made? Do they fit me?—I am no Judge, said I, and please your Honour; but I think they look very fine.

His Waiftcoat stood on end with Silver Lace, and he looked very grand. But what he did last, has made me very serious, and I could make him no Said he, why don't you wear your Compliments. usual Cloaths? Tho' I think every thing looks well upon you (for I still continue in my new Dress). I faid, I have no Cloaths, Sir, I ought to call my own, but these: And it is no Matter what such an one as I wears. Said he, Why, you look very ferious, Pamela. I fee you can bear Malice .. Yes, fo I can, Sir, faid I, according to the Occasion! Why, faid he, your Eyes always look red, I think. Are you not a Fool to take my last Freedom so much to heart? I am fure you, and that Fool Mrs. Fervis, frightened me, by your hideous Squalling, as much as I could frighten you. That is all we had for it, faid I; and if you could be so afraid of your own Servants knowing of your Attempts upon a poor unworthy Creature, that is under your Protection while I stay, furely your Honour ought to be more afraid of God Almighty, in whose Presence we all stand, in every Action of our Lives, and to whom the Greatest, as well as the Least, must be accountable, let them think what they lift.

He took my Hand, in a kind good-humoured Mockery, and faid, Well urged, my pretty Preacher! When my Lincolnshire Chaplain dies, I'll put thee on a Gown and Cassock, and thou'lt make a good Figure in his Place.—I wish, said I, a little vexed at his Jeer, your Honour's Conscience would be

your Preacher, and then you would need no other Chaplain. Well, well Pamela, said he, no more of this unfashionable Jargon. I did not send for you so much for your Opinion of my new Suit, as to tell you, you are welcome to stay, since Mrs. Jervis, desire it, till she goes. I welcome! said I; I am sure I shall rejoice when I am out of the House!

Well, said he, you are an ungrateful Baggage; but I am thinking it would be pity, with these fair soft Hands, and that lovely Skin (as he called it, and took hold of my Hand), that you should return again to hard Work, as you must, if you go to your Father's; and so I would advise her to take a House in London, and let Lodgings to us Members of Parliament, when we come to Town; and such a pretty Daughter as you may pass for, will always fill her House, and she'll get a great deal of Money.

I was fadly vexed at this barbarous Joke; but being ready to cry before, the Tears gushed out, and (endeavouring to get my Hand from him, but in vain) I said, I can expect no better: Your Behaviour, Sir, to me, has been just of a Piece with these Words: Nay, I will fay't, tho' you were to be ever fo angry.—I angry, Pamela! No, no, faid he, I have overcome all that; and as you are to go away, I look upon you now as Mrs. Fervis's Guest while you both stay, and not as my Servant; and so you may say what you will. But, I'll tell you Pamela, why you need not take this Matter in such high Difdain !—You have a very pretty romantic Turn for Virtue, and all that.—And I don't suppose but you'll hold it still; and nobody will be able to prevail upon you. But, my Child (fleeringly he spoke it), do but consider what a fine Opportunity you will then have, for a Tale every Day, to good Mother Jervis, and what Subjects for Letter-writing to your Father and Mother, and what pretty Preachments ments you may hold forth to the young Gentlemen. Ad's my Heart! I think it would be the best Thing

you and the could do.

You do well, Sir, said I, to even your Wit to fuch a poor Maiden as me: But, permit me to fay, that if you was not rich and great, and I poor and little, you would not infult me thus. ——Let me ask you, Sir, if you think this becomes your fine Cloaths, and a Mafter's Station? Why fo ferious, my pretty Pamela? faid he: Why fo grave? And would kiss me; but my Heart was full, and I said, Let me alone? I will tell you, if you was a King, and infulted me as you have done, that you have forgotten to act like a Gentleman: And I won't flay to be used thus: I will go to the next Farmer's, and there wait for Mrs. Fervis, if she must go: And I'd have you know, Sir, that I can stoop to the ordinariest Work of your Scullions, for all these nasty fost Hands, sooner than bear such ungentlemanly Imputations.

I sent for you, said he, in high good Humour; but 'tis impossible to hold it with such an Impertinent: However, I'll keep my Temper. But while I see you here, pray don't put on those dismal grave Looks: Why, Girl, you should forbear 'em, if it were but for your Pride-sake; for the Family will think you are grieving to leave the House. Then, Sir, said I, I will try to convince them of the contrary, as well as your Honour; for I will endeavour to be more chearful while I stay, for that very

Reason.

Well, replied he, I will fet this down by itself, as the first Time that ever what I had advised had any Weight with you. And I will say, said I, as the first Advice you have given me of late, that was fit to be follow'd—I wish, said he (I'm almost ashamed to write it, impudent Gentleman as he is! I wish), I had

I had thee as quick another Way, as thou art in thy Repartees—And he laughed, and I fnatched my Hand from him, and I tripped away as fast as I could. Ah! thought I, married? I'm sure 'tis Time you were married, or at this Rate no honest Maiden ought to live with you.

Why, dear Father and Mother, to be fure he grows quite a Rake! How easy it is to go from bad to worse, when once People give way to Vice!

How would my poor Lady, had she lived, have grieved to see it! But may-be he would have been better then! - Tho' it seems he told Mrs. Fervis, he had an Eye upon me in his Mother's Life-time; and he intended to let me know as much, by the bye, he told her! Here's Shamelessness for you! Sure the World must be near at an End! for all the Gentlemen about are as bad as he almost, as far as I can hear!—And see the Fruits of such bad Examples! There is 'Squire Martin in the Grove, has had three Lyings-in, it seems, in his House, in three Months pait; one by himself; and one by his Coachman; and one by his Woodman, and yet he has turned none of them away. Indeed, how can he, when they but follow his own vile Example? There is he, and two or three more such as he, within ten Miles of us; who keep Company, and hunt with our fine Master, truly; and I suppose he's never the better for their Examples. But, Heaven bless me, say I, and send me out of this wicked House!

But, dear Father and Mother, what Sort of Creature must the Womenkind be, do you think, to give way to such Wickedness? Why, this it is that makes every one be thought of alike: And, a-lack-a-day! what a World we live in! for it is grown more a Wonder that the Men are resisted, than that the Women comply. This, I suppose, makes me such a

Sauce-box, and Bold-face and a Creature, and all because I won't be a Sauce-box and Bold-face indeed.

But I am forry for these Things; one don't know what Arts and Stratagems Men may devise to gain their vile Ends; and so I will think as well as I can of these poor undone Creatures, and pity them. For you see by my sad Story, and narrow Escapes, what Hardships poor Maidens go thro', whose Lot it is to go out to bervice; especially to Houses where there is not the Fear of God, and good Rule kept by the Heads of the Family.

You see I am quite grown grave and serious; in-

deed it becomes the present Condition of

Your dutiful Daughter.

LETTER XXVII.

Dear Father and Mother,

The Letter, that he carried. I am forry you let him fee that; for they all mistrust already how Matters are; and as it is no Credit that I have been attempted, tho' it is that I have resisted; yet I am forry they have Cause to think so evil of my Master from any of us.

Mrs. Jervis has made up her Accounts with Mr. Longman, and will stay in her Place. I am glad of it, for her own fake, and for my Master's; for she has a good Master of him; so indeed all have, but poor me!—and he has a good Housekeeper in her.

Mr. Longman, it seems, took upon him to talk to my Master, how faithful and careful of his Interests she was, and how exact in her Accounts; and he told him, there was no Comparison between her Accounts and Mrs. Jewkes's, at the Lincolnshire Estate.

He said so many fine Things, it seems, of Mrs. Jervis, that my Master sent for her in Mr. Longman's Presence, and said Pamela might come along with her; I suppose to mortify me, that I must go, while she was to stay: But as, when I go away, I am not to go with her, nor was she to go with me; so I did not matter it much; only it would have been creditable to such a poor Girl, that the House-keeper would bear me Company, if I went.

Said he to her, Well, Mrs. Fervis, Longman fays you have made up your Accounts with him, with your usual Fidelity and Exactness. I had a good mind to make you an Offer of continuing with me, if you can be a little forry for your halty Words, which indeed were not so respectful as I have deferved at your Hands. She seemed at a sad loss what to say, because Mr. Longman was there, and she could not speak of the Occasion of those Words, which was me.

Indeed, said Mr. Longman, I must needs say before your Face, that since I have known my Master's Family, I have never found such good Management in it, nor so much Love and Harmony neither. I wish the Lincolnsbire Estate was as well served!—No more of that, said my Master; but Mrs. Fervis may stay, if she will: And here, Mrs. Fervis, pray accept of this, which at the Close of every Year's Accounts I will present you with, besides your Salary, as long as I find your Care so useful and agreeable. And he gave her five Guineas.—She made him a low Curt'sy, and thanking him, looked to me, as if she would have spoken to me

He took her Meaning, I believe; for he faid,—Indeed, I love to encourage Merit and Obligingness, Longman; but I can never be equally kind to those who don't deserve it at my Hands, as to those who do; and then he looked full at me. Longman,

e

continued he, I said that Girl might come in with Mrs. Fervis, because they love to be always together. For Mrs. Fervis is very good to her, and loves her as well as if she was her Daughter. But else—Mr. Longman, interrupting him, said, Good to Mrs. Pamela! Ay, Sir, and so she is, to be sure!

But every-body must be good to her; for-

He was going on: But my Master said, No more. no more, Mr. Longman. I fee old Men are taken with pretty young Girls, as well as other Folks; and fair Locks hide many a Fault, where a Person has the Art to behave obligingly. Why, and please your Honour, faid Mr. Longman, every-body-and was going on, I believe to fay fomething more in my Praise; but he interrupted him, and said, Not a Word more of this Pamela. I can't let her stay, I'll affure you; not only for her own Freedom of Speech, but her Letter-writing of all the Secrets of my Family. Ay! faid the good old Man! I'm forry for that too! But, Sir,-No more, I fay, faid my Master; for my Reputation's so well known (mighty fine, thought I!), that I care not what any-body writes or fays of me: But to tell you the Truth (not that it need go further), I think of changing my Condition foon; and, you know, young Ladies of Birth and Fortune will choose their own Servants, and that's my chief Reason why Pamela can't stay. As for the rest, said he, the Girl is a good fort of Body, take her all together; tho' I must needs fay, a little pert, fince my Mother's Death, in her Answers, and gives me two Words for one; which I can't bear; nor is there Reason I should you know, Longman. No, to be fure, Sir, faid he; but 'tis strange methinks, she should be so mild and meek to every one of us in the House, and forget herself so where she should shew most Respect! Very true, Mr. Longman, said he; but so it is, I'll affure

affure you; and it was from her Pertness, that Mrs. Fervis and I had the Words: And I should mind it the less, but that the Girl (there she stands, I say it to her Face) has Wit and Sense above her Years, and knows better.

I was in great Pain to fay fomething, but yet I knew not what, before Mr. Longman; and Mrs. Fervis looked at me, and walked to the Window to hide her concern for me. At last, I said, It is for you, Sir, to say what you please; and for me

only to fay, God bless your Honour!

Poor Mr. Longman faultered in his Speech, and was ready to cry. Said my infulting Master to me, Why, pr'ythee, Pamela, now, shew thyself as thou art, before Longman. Can'st not give him a Specimen of that Pertness which thou hast exercised upon me sometimes?

Did he not, my dear Father and Mother, deserve all the Truth to be told? Yet I overcame myself so far, as to say, Well, your Honour may play upon a poor Girl, that you know can answer you, but dare not.

Why, pr'ythee now, Infinuator, said he, say the worst you can before Longman and Mrs. Fervis. I challenge the utmost of thy Impertinence; and as you are going away, and have the Love of everybody, I would be a little justified to my Family, that you have no Reason to complain of Hardships from me, as I have of pert saucy Answers from you, besides exposing me by your Letters.

Surely, Sir, faid I, I am of no Consequence equal to this, in your Honour's Family, that such a great Gentleman as you, should need to justify yourself about me. I am glad Mrs. Jervis stays with your Honour; and I know I have not deserved to stay;

and, more than that, I don't defire to stay.

Ads-bobbers! faid Mr. Longman, and ran to me; don't fay fo, don't fay fo, dear Mrs. Pamela! We all

love you dearly; and pray down of your Knees, and ask his Honour Pardon, and we will all become Pleaders in a Body, and I, and Mrs. Fervis too, at the Head of it, to beg his Honour's Pardon, and to continue you, at least till his Honour marries.—
No, Mr. Longman, said I, I cannot ask; nor will I stay, if I might. All I desire, is, to return to my poor Father and Mother; and tho' I love you all, I won't stay.—O well-a-day, well-a-day! said the good old Man, I did not expect this!—When I had got Matters thus far, and had made all up for Mis. Fervis, I was in hopes to have got a double Holiday of Joy for all the Family, in your Pardon too. Well, said my Master, this is a little Specimen of what I told you, Longman. You see there's

a Spirit you did not expect.

Mrs. Fervis told me after, that she could stay no longer, to hear me fo hardly used; and must have spoken, had she staid, what would never have been forgiven her; so she went out. I looked after her to go tco; but my Master said, Come, Pamela, give another Specimen, I desire you, to Longman: I am sure you must, if you will but speak. Weil, Sir, said I, fince it feems your Greatness wants to be justified by my Lowness, and I have no Defire you should fuffer in the Sight of your Family, I will fay, on my bended knees (and fo I kneeled down), that I have been a very faulty, and a very ungrateful Creature to the hest of Masters: I have been very perverse and faucy; and have deferved nothing at your Hands, but to be turned out of your Family with Shame and Difgrace. I, therefore have nothing to fay for myfelf, but that I am not worthy to stay, and so cannot wish to stay, and will not stay: And so God Almighty bless you, and you Mr. Longman, and good Mrs. Fervis, and every living Soul of the Family! and I will pray for you as long as I live.—And fo I rose up, and was forced to lean upon my Master's

Elbow-chair, or I should have funk down.

The poor old Man wept more than I, and faid, Ads-bobbers, was ever the like heard! 'Tis too much, too much; I can't bear it. As I hope to live, I am quite melted. Dear Sir, forgive her: The poor Thing prays for you; she prays for us all! She owns her Fault; yet won't be forgiven! I profess I know not what to make of it.

My Master himself, hardened Wretch as he was, seemed a little moved, and took his Handkerchief out of his Pocket, and walked to the Window: What Sort of a Day is it? said he.—And then getting a little more Hard-heartedness, he said, Well, you may be gone from my Presence, thou strange Medly of Inconsistence! but you shan't stay after

your Time in the House.

d

0

d

d

d

! I Nay, pray, Sir, pray, Sir, faid the good old Man, relent a little. Ads-heartlikins! you young Gentlemen are made of Iron and Steel, I think: I'm fure, faid he, my Heart's turned into Butter, and is running away at my Eyes. I never felt the like before.—Said my Master, with an imperious Tone, get out of my Presence, Hussy; I can't bear you in my Sight. Sir, said I, I'm going as fast as I can.

But indeed, my dear Father and Mother, my Head was so giddy, and my Limbs trembled so, that I was sorced to go holding by the Wainscot all the way with both my Hands, and thought I should not have got to the Door: But when I did, as I hoped this would be my last Interview with this terrible hard-hearted Master, I turned about, and made a low Curt'sy, and said, God bless you, Sir! God bless you, Mr. Longman! and I went into the Lobby leading to the great Hall, and dropt into the first Chair; for I could get no farther a good while.

I leave all these Things to your Resection, my dear Parents; but I can write no more. My poor Heart's almost broken! Indeed it is.—O when shall I get away!—Send me, good God, in Safety, once more to my poor Father's peaceful Cot!—and there the worst that can happen will be Joy in persection to what I now bear!—O pity

Your distressed Daughter.

LETTER XXVIII.

My dear Father and Mother,

MUST write on, tho' I shall come so soon; for now I have hardly any thing else to do. I have sinished all that lay upon me, and only wait the good Time of setting out. Mrs. Jervis said, I must be low in Pocket, for what I had laid out; and so would have presented me with Two Guineas of her Five; but I could not take them of her, because, poor Gentlewoman, she pays old Debts for her Children that were extravagant, and wants them herself. This, tho', was very good in her.

I am forry, I shall have but little to bring with me; but I know you won't, you are so good!—and I will work the harder, when I come home, if I can get a little Plain-work, or any-thing to do. But all your Neighbourhood is so poor, that I fear I shall want Work; except, may-be, Dame Mumford can help me to something, from any good Family she is

acquainted with.

Here, what a fad Thing it is! I have been brought up wrong, as Matters stand. For, you know, my good Lady, now in Heaven, loved Singing and Dancing; and, as she would have it I had a Voice, she made me learn both; and often and often has she made me sing her an innocent Song, and a good Psalm

Pfalm too, and dance before her. And I must learn to slower and draw too, and to work fine Work with my Needle; why, all this too I have got pretty tolerably at my Fingers End, as they say; and she used to praise me, and was a good Judge of such Matters.

Well now, what is all this to the Purpose, as

Things have turned about?

Why no more nor less, than that I am like the Grashopper in the Fable, which I have read of in my Lady's Book; as follows*:

"As the Ants were airing their Provisions one Winter, a hungry Grashopper (as suppose it was poor I) begged a Charity of them. They told him, That he should have wrought in Summer, if he would not have wanted in Winter. Well, says the Grashopper, but I was not idle neither; for I sung out the whole Season. Nay, then,

" faid they, you'll e'en do well to make a merry

"Year of it, and dance in Winter to the Tune you fung in Summer."

So I shall make a fine Figure with my Singing and my Dancing, when I come home to you! Nay, I shall be unfit even for a May-day Holiday-time; for these Minuets, Rigadoons and French Dances, that I have been practising, will make me but ill Company for my Milk-maid Companions that are to be. To be sure I had better, as Things stand, have learned to wash and scour, and brew and bake, and such like. But I hope, if I can't get Work, and can meet with a Place, to learn these soon, if any-body

^{*} See the Æfop's Fables which have lately been felected and reformed from those of Sir R. L'Estrange, and the most eminent Mythologists.

body will have the Goodness to bear with me, till I am able: For, notwithstanding what my Master says, I hope I have an humble and teachable Mind; and, next to God's Grace, that is all my Comfort: For I shall think nothing too mean that is honest. It may be a little hard at first; but wo to my proud Heart, if I find it so on Trial; for I will make it bend to its Condition, or break it.

I have read of a good Bishop that was to be burnt for his Religion; and he tried how he could bear it, by putting his Fingers into the lighted Candle: So I, t'other Day, tried, when Rachel's Back was turned, if I could not scour a Pewter Plate she had begun. I see I could do't by Degrees: It only blistered my

Hand in two Places.

All the Matter is, if I could get Plain-work enough, I need not spoil my Fingers. But if I can't I hope to make my Hands as red as a Blood-pudding, and as hard as a Beachen Trencher, to accommodate them to my Condition.—But I must break off; here's somebody coming.

'Tis only our Hannah with a Message from Mrs. Fervis.—But, hold, here is somebody else.—Well,

it is only Rachel.

I am as much frighted as were the City Mouse and the Country Mouse, in the same Book of Fables, at every thing that stirs. Oh! I have a Power of these Things to entertain you with in Winter Evenings, when I come home. If I can but get Work, with a little Time for Reading, I hope we shall be very happy, over our Peat Fires.

What made me hint to you, that I should bring but little with me is this:

You must know, I did intend to do, as I have this Afternoon: And that is, I took all my Cloaths, and

and all my Linen, and I divided them into three Parcels, as I had before told Mrs. Jervis I intended to do; and I faid, It is now Monday, Mrs. Jervis, and I am to go away on Thursday Morning betimes; so, tho' I know you don't doubt my Honesty, I beg you will look over my poor Matters, and let every one have what belongs to them; for, said I, you know I am resolved to take with me only what I can properly call my own.

Said she (I did not know her Drift then; to be sure she meant well; but I did not thank her for it, when I did know it), Let your Things be brought down into the Green-room, and I will do any-thing

you would have me do.

With all my Heart, said I, Green-room or anywhere; but I think you might step up, and see'em as they lie.

However, I fetched 'em down, and laid them in three Parcels, as before; and, when I had done, I

went down to call her up to look at them.

Now, it feems, she had prepared my Master for this Scene, unknown to me; and in this Green-room was a Closet, with a Sash-door and a Curtain before it; for there she puts her Sweet-meats and such things; and she did it, it seems, to turn his Heart, as knowing what I intended, I suppose that he should make me take the Things; for if he had, I should have made Money of them, to help us when we got together; for, to be sure, I could never have appeared in them.

Well, as I was faying, he had got, unknown to me, into this Closet; I suppose while I went to call Mrs. Fervis: And she since owned to me, it was at his Desire, when she told him something of what I intended, or else she would not have done it: Tho' I have Reason, I am sure, to remember the last

Closet-work.

So I said, when she came up, Here, Mrs. Fervis, is the first Parcel; I will spread it all abroad. These are the Things my good Lady gave me.—In the first place, said I—and so I went on describing the Cloaths and Linen my Lady had given me, mingling Blessings, as I proceeded, for her Goodness to me; and when I had turned over that Parcel, I said, Well, so much for the first Parcel, Mrs. Jervis; that was my Lady's Gists.

Now I come to the Presents of my dear virtuous Master: Hay, you know, Closet for that! Mrs. Jervis. She laughed, and said, I never saw such a comical Girl in my Life! But go on. I will, Mrs. Jervis, said I, as soon as I have opened the Bundle; for I was as brisk and as pert as could be,

little thinking who heard me.

Now here, Mrs. Fervis, said I, are my ever worthy Master's Presents; and then I particularized all those in the second Bundle.

After which, I turned to my own, and faid,

Now, Mrs. Jervis, comes poor Pamela's Bundle; and a little one it is to the others. First, here is a Calico Night-gown, that I used to wear o'Mornings. 'Twill be rather too good for me when I get home; but I must have something. Then there is a quilted Calimanco Coat, and a Pair of Stockens I bought of the Pedlar, and my Straw-hat with blue Strings; and a Remnant of Scots Cloth, which will make two Shirts and two Shifts, the fame I have on, for my poor Father and Mother. And here are four other Shifts, one the Fellow to that I have on; another pretty good one, and the other two old fine ones, that will ferve me to turn and wind with at home, for they are not worth leaving behind me; and here are two Pair of Shoes; I have taken the Lace off, which I will burn, and may-be will fetch me fome

Then,

some litttle matter at a Pinch, with an old Silver Buckle or two.

What do you laugh for, Mrs. Jervis? faid I.— Why you are like an April Day; you cry and laugh in a Breath.

Well, let me see; an, here is a Cotton Hand-kerchief I bought of the Pedlar; there should be another somewhere. O here it is! and here too are my new-bought knit Mittens: And this is my new Flannel Coat, the Fellow to that I have on: And in this Parcel, pinned together, are several Pieces of Printed Calico, Remnants of Silks, and such-like, that, if good Luck should happen, and I should get Work, would serve for Robings and Facings, and such-like Uses. And here too are a Pair of Pockets; they are too sine for me; but I have no worse. Bless me! said I, I did not think I had so many good Things!

Well, Mrs. Fervis, faid I, you have feen all my Store, and I will now fit down, and tell you a Piece of my Mind.

Be brief then, said she, my good Girl; for she was afraid, she said afterwards, that I should say too much.

Why then the Case is this: I am to enter upon a Point of Equity and Conscience, Mrs. Jervis; and I must beg, if you love me, you'd let me have my own way. Those things there of my Lady's, I can have no Claim to, so as to take them away; for she gave them me, supposing I was to wear them in het Service, and to do Credit to her bountiful Heart. But, since I am to be turned away, you know, I cannot wear them at my poor Father's; for I should bring all the little Village upon my Back; and so I resolve not to have them.

Vol. I.

Then, Mrs. Fervis, said I, I have far less Right to these of my worthy Master's: For you see what was his Intention in giving them to me. So they were to be the Price of my Shame, and if I could make use of them, I should think I should never prosper with them; and besides, you know, Mrs. Fervis, if I would not do the good Gentleman's Work, why should I take his Wages? So in Conscience, in Honour, in every-Thing, I have nothing to say to thee, thou second wicked Bundle!

But, faid I, come to my Arms, my dear third Parcel, the Companion of my Poverty, and the Witness of my Honesty; and may I never deserve the least Rag that is contained in thee, when I forfeit a Title to that Innocence, that I hope will ever be the Pride of my Life! and then I am sure it will be my highest Comfort at my Death, when all the Riches and Pomps of the World will be worse than the vilest Rags that can be worn by Beggais! And

fo I hugged my third Bundle.

But, faid I, Mrs. Fervis (and she wept to hear me), one thing more I have to trouble you with,

and that's all.

There are four Guineas, you know, that came out of my good Lady's Pocket, when she dy'd, that, with some Silver, my Master gave me: Now these same four Guineas I sent to my poor Father and Mother, and they have broken them; but would make them up, if I would: And if you think it should be so, it shall. But pray tell me honestly your Mind: As to the three Years before my Lady's Death, do you think, as I had no Wages, I may be supposed to be Quits?—By Quits, I cannot mean that my poor Services should be equal to my Lady's Goodness; for that's impossible. But as all her Learning and Education of me, as Matters have turned, will be of little Service to me now; for it had been better

for me to have been brought up to hard Labour, to be fure; for that I must turn to at last, if I can't get a Place (and you know, in Places too, one is subject to such Temptations as are dreadful to think of): So, I fay, by Quits I only mean, as I return all the good Things she gave me, whether I may not fet my little Services against my Keeping; because, as I faid, my Learning is not now in the Question; and I am fure my dear good Lady would have thought so, had she lived: But that too is now out of the Question. Well then, if so, I would ask, whether, in above this Year that I have lived with my Master, as I am resolved to leave all his Gifts behind me, I may not have earned, besides my Keeping, these four Guineas, and these poor Cloaths here upon my Back, and in my third Bundle? Now tell me your Mind freely, without Favour or Affection.

Alas! my dear Girl, said she, you make me unable to speak to you at all: To be sure, it will be the highest Affront that can be offered, for you to leave any of these Things behind you; and you must take all your Bundles with you, or my Master

will never forgive you.

0

u

e

r

d

e

er

or

Well, well, Mrs. Jervis, said I, I don't care; I have been too much used to be snubbed and hardly treated by my Master, of late. I have done him no Harm; and I shall always pray for him, and wish him happy. But I don't deserve these things; I know I don't. Then, I can't wear them, if I should take them; so they can be of no Use to me: And I trust I shall not want the poor Pittance, that is all I desire to keep Life and Soul together. Bread and Water I can live upon, Mrs. Jervis, with Content. Water I shall get any-where; and if I can't get me Bread, I will live like a Bird in Winter upon Hips and Haws, and at other times upon Pig-nuts, and Potatoes, or F 2

Turneps, or any thing. So what Occasion have I for these Things?—But all I ask is about these Four Guineas, and if you think I need not return them. that is all I want to know.—To be fure my Dear, you need not, faid she; you have well earned them by that Waistcoat only. No, I think not fo, in that only; but in the Linen, and other Things, do you think I have? Yes, yes, faid she, and more. And my Keeping allowed for, I mean, faid I, and these poor Cloaths on my Back, besides? Remember that, Mrs. fervis. Yes, my dear Oddone, no doubt you have. Well then, said I, I am as happy as a Princess. I am quite as rich as I wish to be: And once more, my dear third Bundle, I will hug thee to my Fosom. And I beg you'll fay nothing of all this till I am gone, that my Master mayn't be so angry, but that I may go in Peace; for my Heart, without other Matters, will be ready to break to part with you

Now, Mrs. Fevris, faid I, as to one Matter more: And that is my Master's last Usage of me, before Mr. Longman. Said she, Pry'thee, dear -Pamela, step to my Chamber, and fetch me a Paper I left on my Table. I have fomething to fhew you in it. I will faid I, and flepped down; but that was only a Fetch to take the Orders of my Master, I found. It feems he faid, he thought two or three times to have burst out upon me; but he could not stand it, and wished I might not know he was there. But I tripp'd up again no nimbly (for there was no Paper), that I just faw his Back, as if coming out of that Green-room, and going into the next to it, the first door that was open-I whipped in, and shut the Door, and bolted it. O Mrs. Fervis, faid I, what have you done by me? -I fee I can't confide in any-body. I am befet on all

all Hands. Wretched, wretched Pamela! where shalt thou expect a Friend, if Mrs. Jervis joins to betray thee thus?—She made so many Protestations (telling me all, and that he owned I had made him wipe his Eyes two or three times, and said she hoped it would have a good Essect, and remembered me, that I had said nothing but what would rather move Compassion than Resentment), that I forgave her. But O! that I was safe from this House! for never poor Creature sure was so slustered as I have been so many Months together!—I am call'd down from this most tedious Scribble. I wonder what will next besal

Your dutiful Daughter.

Mrs. Fervis says, she is sure I shall have the Chariot to carry me home to you. Tho' this will look too great for me, yet it will shew as if I was not turned away quite in Disgrace. The travelling Chariot is come from Lincolnshire, and I sansy I shall go in that; for the other is quite grand.

LETTER XXIX.

My dear Father and Mother,

March 1919 Told

I Write again, though, may-be, I shall bring it to you in my Pocket: For I shall have no Write-ing, nor Writing-time, I hope, when I come to you. This is Wednesday Morning, and I shall, I hope, set out to you To-morrow Morning; but I have had more Trials, and more Vexations; but of another Complexion too a little, tho' all from the same Quarter.

F 3

Yester-

Yesterday my Master, after he came from Hunting, sent for me. I went with great Terror; for I expected he would storm, and be in a fine Passion with me for my Freedom of Speech before: So I was resolved to begin sirst, with Submission, to disarm his Anger; and I sell upon my Knees as soon as I saw him; and said, Good Sir, let me beseech you, as you hope to be forgiven yourself, and for the sake of my dear good Lady your Mother, who recommended me to you with her last Words, to forgive me all my Faults; and only grant me this Favour, the last I shall ask you, that you will let me depart your House with Peace and Quietness of Mind, that I may take such a Leave of my dear Fellow-Servants as besits me; and that my Heart be not quite broken.

He took me up, in a kinder manner than ever I had known; and he faid, Shut the Door, Pamela, and come to me in my Closet: I want to have a little serious Talk with you. How can I, Sir, said I, how can I! and wrung my Hands. O pray, Sir, let me go out of your Presence, I beseech you. By the God that made me, said he, I'll do you no Harm. Shut the Parlour-Door, and come to me in

my Library.

He then went into his Closet, which is his Library, and full of rich Pictures besides; a noble Apartment, tho' called a Closet, and next the private Garden, into which it has a Door that opens. I shut the Parlour-Door, as he bid me; but stood at it irresolute. Place some Considence in me, said he: Surely you may, when I have spoken thus solemnly. So I crept towards him with trembling Feet, and my Heart throbbing thro' my Handkerchies. Come in, said he, when I bid you. I did so. Pray, Sir, said I, pity and spare me. I will, said he, as I hope to be sav'd. He sat down upon a rich Settee; and took hold of my Hand, and said, Don't doubt me, Panela.

mela. From this Moment I will no more confider you as my Servant; and I desire you'll not use me with Ingratitude for the Kindness I am going to express towards you. This a little emboldened me; and he said; holding both my Hands between his, You have two much Wit and good Sense not to discover, that I, in spite of my Heart, and all the Pride of it, cannot but love you. Yes, look up to me my sweet-sac'd Girl! I must say I love you; and have put on a Behaviour to you, that was much against my Heart, in hopes to frighten you from your Reservedness. You see I own it ingenuously; and don't play your Sex upon me for it.

I was unable to speak; and he, seeing me too much oppressed with Consusion to go on in that Strain, said, Well, Pamela, let me know in what Situation of Life is your Father: I know he is a poor Man; but is he as low and as honest as he was when

my Mother took you?

Then I could speak a little; and with a down Look (and I felt my Face glow like Fire) I faid, Yes, Sir, as poor and as honeff too; and that is my Pride. Says he, I will do fomething for him, if it be not your Fault, and make all your Family happy. Ah! Sir faid I, he is happier already then ever he can be, if his Daughter's Innocence is to be the Price of your Favour: And I beg you will not speak to me on the only Side that can wound me. I have no Design of that Sort, said he. O Sir, said I, tell me. not so, tell me not so !- 'Tis easy, said he, for me to be the Making of your Father, without injuring you. Well, Sir, said I, if this can be done, let me know how; and all I can do with Innocence shall be the Study and Practice of my Life.—But, O! what can fuch a poor Creature as I do, and do my Duty ?—Said he, I would have you stay a Week or Fortnight only, and behave yourfelf with Kindneis

ness to me; I stoop to beg it of you, and you shall fee all shall turn out beyond your Expectation. I fee, faid he, you are going to answer otherwise than I would have you; and I begin to be vexed I should thus meanly sue; and so I will say, that your Behaviour before honest Longman, when I used you as I did, and you could fo well have vindicated yourself, has quite charmed me. And tho' I am not pleased with all you said Yesterday, while I was in the Closet, yet you have moved me more to abmire you than before; and I am awakened to fee more Worthiness in you, than ever I saw in any Lady in the World. All the Servants, from the highest to the lowest, doat upon you, instead of envying you; and look upon you in fo fuperior a Light, as speaks what you ought to be. I have fren more of your Letters than you imagine (This furprifed me!) and am quite overcome with your charming manner of Writing, fo free, fo eafy, and many of your Sentiments formuch above your Years, and your Sex? and all put together, makes me, as I tell you, love you to Extravagance. Now, Pamela, when I have stooped to acknowledge all this, oblige me only to flay another Week or Fortnight, to give me time to bring about some certain Affairs and you shall see how much you may find your Account in it.

I trembled to find my poor Heart giving way.

O good Sir, said I, spare a poor Girl that cannot look up to you, and speak. My Heart is sull:

And why should you wish to undo me?

Only oblige, me said he, to stay a Fortnight longer, and John shall carry word to your Father, that I will see him in the Time, either here, or at the Swan in the Village. O Sir, said I, my Heart will burst; but, on my bended Knees, I beg you to let me go to-morrow, as I designed:

And don't offer to tempt a poor Creature, whose whose Will would be to do yours, if my Virtue would permit.—It shall permit it, said he; for I intend no Injury to you, God is my Witness! Impossible! said I; I cannot, Sir, believe you, after what has paffed: How many ways are there to undo poor Creatures! Good God, protect me this one time, and fend me but to my dear Father's Cot in fafety! -Strange, damn'd Fate! fays he, that when I speak fo folemnly, I can't be believed !- What should I believe, Sir? faid I; what can I believe, What have you faid, but that I am to flay a Fortnight longer? and what then is to become of me?— My Pride of Birth and Fortune (damn them both! faid he, fince they cannot obtain Credit with you, but must add to your Suspicions) will not let me descend, all at once; and I ask you but a Fortnight's Stay, that after this Declaration, I may pacify those proud Demands upon me.

O how my Heart throbb'd! and I began (for I did not know what I did) to fay the Lord's Prayer. None of your Beads to me Pamela! faid he; thou

art a perfect Nun, I think.

But I said aloud, with my Eyes listed up to Heaven, Lead me not into Temptation: but deliver me from Evil, O my good God! he hugg'd me in his Arms, and said, Well my dear Girl, then you stay this Fortnight, and you shall see what I will do for you—I'll leave you a Moment, and walk into the next Room, to give you time to think of it, and to shew you I have no Design upon you. Well, this, I thought, did not look amiss.

He went out, and I was tortured with twenty different Doubts in a Minute; fometimes I thought, that to stay a Week or Fortnight longer in this House to obey him, while Mrs. Fervis was with me,

could do no great Harm : But then, thought I, how do I know what I may be able to do? I have withstood his Anger; but may I not relent at his Kindness?-How shall I stand that?-Well, I hope, thought I, by the same protecting Grace in which I will always confide !- But then, what has he promised? Why, he will make my poor Father and Mother's Life comfortable. O! faid I to myfelf. that is a rich Thought; but let me not dwell upon it, for fear I should indulge it to my Ruin. What can he do for me, poor Girl as I am !-What can his Greatness stoop to! He talks, thought I, of his Pride of Heart, and Pride of Condition; O these are in his Head, and in his Heart too, or he would not confess them to me at such an Instant. Well then, thought I, this can be only to seduce me. -He has promised nothing. But I am to see what he will do, if I flay a Fortnight; and this Fortnight, thought I again, is no fuch great Matter; and I shall see in a few Days how he carries it.—But then, when I again reflected upon this Distance between him and me, and his now open Declaration of Love, as he called it; and that after this he would talk with me on that Subject more plainly than ever, and I should be less armed, may-be, to withftand him; and then I bethought myself, why, if he meant no Dishonour, he should not speak before Mrs. Jervis; and the odious frightful Closet came again into my Head, and my narrow Escape upon it; and how easy it might be for him to fend Mrs. Jervis, and the Maids, out of the Way; and fo that all the Mischief he designed me might be brought about in less than that time; I resolved to go away, and trust all to Providence, and nothing to myself. And how ought I to be thankful for this Resolution! --- as you shall hear.

But

But just as I have writ to this Place, John sends me Word, that he is going this Minute your Way; and so I will send you so far as I have written, and hope, by to-morrow Night, to ask your Blessings, at your own poor, but happy Abode, and tell you the rest by Word of Mouth; and so I rest, till then, and for ever,

Your dutiful Daughter.

LETTER XXX.

Dear Father and Mother, And Andrews

WILL continue my Writing still, because, maybe, I shall like to read it, when I am with you, to see what Dangers I have been enabled to escape;

and tho' I bring it along with me. I stigue in !

I told you my Resolution, my happy Resolution, as I have reason to think it: And just then he came in again, with great Kindness in his Looks, and faid, I make no doubt, Pamela, you will fray this Fortnight to oblige me. I knew not how to frame my Words fo as to deny, and yet not make him storm. But, said I, Forgive, Sir, your poor distressed Servant. I know I cannot possibly deserve any Favour at your Hands, confistent with Virtue; and I beg you will let me go to my poor Father. Why, faid he, thou art the veriest Fool that I ever knew. I tell you I will fee your Father; I'll fend for him hither to-morrow, in my travelling Chariot, if you will; and I'll let him know what I intend to do for him and you. What, Sir, may I ask you, oan that be? Your Honour's noble Estate may eafily make him happy, and not unufeful, perhaps to you, in some respect or other. But what Price am I to pay for all this?—You shall be happy as you can wish, faid he, I do affure you: And here I will now give you this Purse, in which are Fifty Guineas. Guineas, which I will allow your Father yearly, and find an Employ fuitable to his Liking, to deferve that and more: Pamela, he shall never want, depend upon it. I would have given you still more for him; but that perhaps you'd suspect I intended it as a Defign upon you.—O Sir, faid I, take back your Guineas: I will not touch one, nor will my Father, I am fure, till he knows what is to be done for them; and particularly what is to become of me. Why then, Pamela, faid he, suppose I find a Man of Probity, and genteel Calling, for a Husband for you, that shall make you a Gentlewoman as long as you live? - I want no Husband, Sir, faid I; for now I began to fee him in all his black Colours!—Yet being fo much in his Power. I thought I would a little dissemble. But, said he. you are so pretty, that go where you will, you can never be free from the Defigns of some or other of our Sex; and I shall think I don't answer the Care of my dying Mother for you, who committed you to me, if I don't provide you a Husband to protect your Virtue, and your Innocence; and a worthy one I have thought of for you.

O black, perfidious Creature! thought I, what an Implement art thou in the Hands of Lucifer, to ruin the innocent Heart?—Yet still I dissembled; for I fear'd much both him and the Place I was in. But, whom, pray Sir, have you thought of?—Why, said he, young Mr. Williams, my Chaplain, in Lincalnshire, who will make you happy. Does he know, Sir, said I, any-thing of your Honour's Intentions?—No, my Girl, said he, and kissed me (much against my Will; for his very Breath was now Poison to me), but his Dependence upon my Favour, and your Beauty and Merit, will make him rejoice at my Kindness to him. Well, Sir, said I, then it is time enough to consider of this Matter;

and

and it cannot hinder me from going to my Father's: For what will staying a Fortnight longer fignify to this? Your Honour's Careand Goodness may extend to me there, as well as here; and Mr. Williams, and all the World, shall know that I am not asham'd of

my Father's Poverty.

He would kiss me again, and I said, if I am to think of Mr. Williams, or any-body, I beg 1941'H not be fo free with me: That is not pretty, I'm fure. Well, said he, but you stay this next Fortnight, and in that Time I'll have both Williams and your Father here; for I will have the Match concluded in my House; and when I have brought it on, you shall settle it as you please together. Meantime take and fend only these Fifty Pieces to your Father, as an Earnest of my Favour, and I'll make you all happy.—Sir, faid I, I beg at least two Hours to confider of this. I shall, said he, be gone out in one Hour; and I would have you write to your Father what I propose; and John shall carry it on purpose; and he shall take the Purse with him for the good old Man, if you approve it. Sir, faid I, I will then let you know in one Hour my Resolution, Do so, said he; and gave me another Kiss, and let me go.

O how I rejoiced I had got out of his Clutches;
—So I write you this, that you may see how Matters stand; for I am resolved to come away, if possible. Base, wicked, treacherous Gentleman as

he is!

I tremble to think of it! O what a Scene of Wickedness was here laid down for all my wretched Life! Black-hearted Wretch! how I hate him!—
For at first, as you'll see by what I have written, he would have made me believe other Things; and this of Mr. Williams, I suppose, came into his Head after

he walked out from his Closet, to give himself Time to think how to delude me better: But the Covering was now too thin, and easy to be seen through.

I went to my Chamber, and the first Thing I did was to write to him; for I thought it was best not to see him again, if I could help it; and I put it under his Parlour-door, after I had copied it, as follows:

· Honour'd Sir,

- OUR last Proposal to me convinces me, that I ought not to stay, but to go to my Father, if it were but to ask his Advice about Mr. Williams.
- And I am fo fet upon it, that I am not to be perfuaded. So, honour'd Sir, with a thousand Thanks
- for all Favours, I will fet out to-morrow early;
- and the Honour you designed me, as Mrs. Ferwis tells me, of your Chariot, there will be no Occasion
- for; because I can hire, I believe, Farmer Brady's
- · Chaife. So, begging you will not take it amis,

· I shall ever be

· Your dutiful Servant.

As to the Purse, Sir, my poor Father, to be sure, won't forgive me, if I take it, till he can know how to deserve it: Which is impossible.'

So he has just now sent Mrs. Fervis to tell me, That since I am resolved to go, go I may, and the travelling Chariot shall be ready; but it shall be worse for me; for that he will never trouble himself about me as long as he lives. Well, so I get out of the House, I care not; only I should have been glad I could, with Innocence, have made you, my dear Parents, happy.

I cannot imagine the Reason of it, but John, who I thought was gone with my last, is but now going;

and he sends to know if I have any-thing else to carry. So I break off to send you this with the former.

I am now preparing for my Journey, and about taking leave of my good Fellow-servants: And if I have not time to write, I must tell you the rest,

when I am so happy as to be with you.

One Word more: I slip in a Paper of Verses, on my going; sad poor Stuff! but as they come from me, you'll not dislike them, may-be. I shew'd them to Mr. Jervis, and she lik'd them, and took a Copy; and made me sing them to her, and in the Green Room too; but I look'd into the Closet first. I will only add, That I am

Your dutiful Daughter.

Let me just say, That he has this Moment sent me Five Guineas by Mrs. Fervis, as a Present for my Pocket: So I shall be very rich; for as she brought them, I thought I might take them. He says he won't see me: And I may go when I will in the Morning; and Lincolnshire Robin shall drive me: But he is so angry, he orders that nobody shall go out at the Door with me, not so much as into the Coach-yard. Well! I can't help it, not I! But does not this expose himself, more than me?

But John waits, and I would have brought this and the other myself; but he says, he has put it up among other Things, and so can take

both as well as one.

John is very good, and very honest; I am under great Obligations to him. I'd give him a Guinea, now I'm so rich, if I thought he'd take it. I hear nothing of my Lady's Cloaths, and those my Master gave me: For I told Mrs. Yervis, I would not take them; but I fansy, by a Word or two that was dropp'd, they will

I'll be the grateful Pumelas

be fent after me. Dear Sirs! what a rich Pamela you'll have, if they should! But as I can't
wear them, if they do, I don't desire them;
and if have them, will turn them into Money,
as I can have Opportunity. Well, no more—
I'm in a fearful Hurry!

VERSES on my going away.

I.

MY Fellow Servants dear, attend To these few Lines, which I have penn'd: I'm sure they're from your honest Friend, And Wisher-well, poor Pamela.

II.

I from a State of low Degree Was plac'd in this good Family: Too high a Fate for humble me, The helpless, hopeless Pamela.

III.

Yet the my happy Let was so, Joyful, I, homeward, from it go, No less content, when poor and low, Than here you find your Pamela,

IV.

For what indeed is Happiness,
But conscious Innecense and Peace?
And that's a Treasure I posses;
Thank Heav'n that gave it Pamela.

V.

My future Lot I cannot know:
But this I'm fure, where-e'er I go,
Whate'er I am, whate'er I do,
I'll be the grateful Pamela,

VI.

No sad Regrets my Heart annoy,
I'll pray for all your Peace and Joy,
From Master high, to Scullion Boy,
For all your Loves to Pamela.

VII.

One Thing or two I've more to say; God's holy Will, be sure, obey; And for our Master always pray, As ever shall poor Pamela.

VIII.

For, Oh! we pity should the Great,
Instead of envying their Estate;
Temptations always on 'em wait,
Exempt from which are such as we.

IX.

Their Riches, gay deceitful Snares, Inlarge their Fears, increase their Cares: Their Servants Joy surpasses theirs; At least, so judges Pamela.

X.

Your Parents and Relations love: Let them your Duty ever prove; And you'll be blefs'd by Heav'n above As will, I hope, poor Pamela.

XI.

For if asham'd I e'er could be
Of my dear Parents low Degree,
What Lot had been too mean for me,
Unbless'd unvirtuous Pamela.

Thrice happy may you ever be, Each one in his and her Degree; And, Sirs, whene'er you think of me, Pray for Content to Pamela.

XIII.

Pray for her wish'd Content and Peace; And rest assur'd she'll never cease, To pray for all your Joys Increase, While Life is lent to Pamela.

XIV.

On God all future Good depends: Serve Him. And so my Sonnet ends, With Thank-ye, thank-ye, honest Friends, For all your Loves to Pamela.

TERE it is necessary the Reader should know that the Fair Pamela's Trials were not yet over; but the worst were to come, at a Time when fhe thought them at an End, and that she was returning to her Father: For when her Master found her Virtue was not to be fubdu'd, and he had in vain try'd to conquer his Passion for her, being a Gentleman of Pleasure and Intrigue, he had ordered his Lincolnshire Coachman to bring his travelling Chariot from thence, not caring to trust his Bedfordshire Coachman, who with the rest of the Servants, for greatly lov'd and honour'd the fair Damfel; and having given him Inftructions accordingly, and prohibited the other Servants, on pretence of refenting Pamela's Behaviour, from accompanying her any Part of the Road, he drove her Five Miles on the Way to her Father's; and then turning off, cross'd the Country, and carry'd her onwards towards his Lincolnshire Estate. It

It is also to be observ'd, that the Messenger of her Letters to her Father, who so often pretended Business that way, was an Implement in his Master's Hands and employ'd by him for that Purpose; and always gave her Letters first to him, and his. Master used to open and read them, and then send them on; by which means, as he hints to her (as she observes in one of her Letters, p. 104) he was no Stranger to what she wrote. Thus every way was the poor Virgin beset: And the Whole will shew the base Arts of designing Men to gain their wicked Ends; and how much it behoves the Fair Sex to stand upon their Guard against artful Contrivances, especially when Riches and Power conspire against Innocence, and a low Estate.

A few Words more will be necessary to make the Sequel better understood. The intriguing Gentleman thought fit, however, to keep back from her Father her three last Letters; in which she mentions his concealing himself to hear her partitioning out her Cloaths, his last Effort to induce her to stay a Fortnight, his pretended Proposal of the Chaplain, and her Hopes of speedily seeing them, as also her Verses; and to send himself a Letter to her Father,

to be the Legacteration of the world which

supply you the formation of the votes

which is as follows:

Goodman ANDREWS,

OU will wonder to receive a Letter from me. But I think I am obliged to let you know, that I have discover'd the strange Correspondence carried on between you and your Daughter, so injurious to my Honour and Reputation, and which, I think, you should not have encouraged, till you knew there were sufficient Grounds for those Aspersions, which she so plentifully

tifully casts upon me. Something possibly there might be in what she has written from time to

' time; but, believe me, with all her pretended

Simplicity and Innocence, I never knew so much romantic Invention as she is Mistress of. In short,

the Girl's Head's turn'd by Romances, and such

' idle Stuff, to which she has given herself up, ever fince her kind Lady's Death. And she assumes

Airs, as if she was a Mirror of Persection, and

every-body had a Defign upon her.

Don't mistake me, however; I believe her very honest, and very virtuous; but I have found out also,

that she is carrying on a fort of Correspondence,

or Love Affair, with a young Clergyman, that I hope in time to provide for; but who, at present,

' is destitute of any Sublistence but my Favour: And what would be the Consequence, can you think, of

two young Folks, who have nothing in the World

to trust to of their own, to come together with a

· Family multiplying upon them, before they have

· Bread to eat?

For my part I have too much Kindness to them

both, not to endeavour to prevent it, if I can; and for this Reason I have sent her out of his Way

for a little while, till I can bring them both to

better Consideration; and I would not, therefore,

' have you be surprised you don't see your Daughter

· fo foon as you might possibly expect.

'Yet I do assure you upon my Honour, that he shall be safe and inviolate; and I hope you

don't doubt me, notwithstanding any Airs she

may have given herfelf, upon my jocular Pleafantry to her, and perhaps a little innocent Romp-

ing with her, fo usual with young Folks of the

two Sexes, when they have been long acquainted,

e and grown up together; for Pride is not my

Talent,

As she is a mighty Letter-writer, I hope she has had the Duty to apprise you of her Intrigue with the young Clergyman; and I know not whether it meets with your Countenance: But

now she is absent for a little while (for I know

he would have followed her to your Village, if he had gone home; and there perhaps they would have ruined one another, by marrying),

I doubt not I shall bring him to see his Interest, and that he engages not before he knows how to provide for a Wise: And when that can be done, let them come together in God's Name, for me.

'I expect not to be answered on this Head, but by your good Opinion, and the Confidence you may repose in my Honour: being

· Your hearty Friend to ferve you.

* P. S. I find my Man John has been the Ma
'nager of the Correspondence, in which such

Liberties have been taken with me. I shall

foon, in a manner that becomes me, let the

faucy Fellow know how much I resent his

Part of the Affair. It is a hard Thing, that a Man of my Character in the World should

be used thus freely by his own Servants.'

It is eafy to guess at the poor old Man's Concernupon reading this Letter, from a Gentleman of so much Consideration. He knew not what Course to take, and had no manner of Doubt of his poor Daughter's Innocence, and that soul Play was design'd her. Yet he sometimes hoped the best, and was ready to believe the surmised Correspondence between the Clergyman and her, having not received the Letters she wrote, which would have cleared up that Affair.

But

But after all, he refolved, as well to quiet his own as her Mother's Uneafiness, to undertake a Journey to the 'Squire's; and leaving his poor Wife to excuse him to the Farmer who employed him, he set out that very Evening, late as it was; and travelling all Night, found himself, soon after Day-light, at the Gate of the Gentleman, before the Family was up: And there he sat down to rest himself till he should

fee somebody stirring.

The Grooms were the first he saw, coming out to water their Horses; and he asked, in so distressful a Manner, what was become of Pamela, that they thought him crazy; and said, Why what have you to do with Pamela, old Fellow? Get out of the Horses Way.—Where is your Master? said the poor Man: pray, Gentlemen, don't be angry: My Heart's almost broken.—He never gives any-thing at the Door, I assure you, says one of the Grooms; so you lose your Labour.—I am not a Begger yet, said the poor old Man; I want nothing of him, but

my Pamela: - O my Child! my Child!

I'll be hang'd, fays one of them, if this is not Mrs. Pamela's Father.—Indeed, indeed, faid he, wringing his Hands, I am; and weeping, Where is my Child? Where is my Pamela?—Why, Father, said one of them, we beg your Pardon; but the is gone home to you: How long have you been come from home?-O! but last Night, said he; I have travelled all Night: Is the Squire at home, or is he not?—Yes, but he is not stirring though, faid the Groom, as yet. Thank God for that! faid he; thank God for that! Then I hope I may be permitted to speak to him anon. They asked him to go in, and he stepp'd into the Stable, and fat down on the Stairs there, wiping his Eyes, and fighing fo fadly, that it grieved the Servants to hear him.

The Family was foon raised, with the Report of Pamela's Father coming to enquire after his Daughter; and the Maids would fain have had him go into the Kitchen. But Mrs. Jervis, having been told of his coming, arose, and hastened down to her Parlour, and took him in with her, and there heard all his sad Story, and read the Letter. She wept bitterly, but yet endeavour'd before him to hide her Concern: and said, Well, Goodman Andrews, I cannot help weeping at your Grief; but I hope there is no Occasion. Let no-body see this Letter, whatever you do. I dare say your Daughter is safe.

Well, but, said he, I see, you, Madam, know nothing about her:—If all was right, so good a Gentlewoman as you are, would not have been a Stranger to this. To be sure, you thought she was with

me!

Said she, My Master does not always inform his Servants of his Proceedings; but you need not doubt his Honour. You have his Hand for it: And you may see he can have no Design upon her, because he is not from hence, and does not talk of going hence. O that is all I have to hope for! faid he; that is all, indeed!—But, said he—and was going on, when the Report of his coming had reached the Squire, who came down in his Morninggown and Slippers, into the Parlour, where he and Mrs. Yervis were talking.

What's the Matter, Goodman Andrews, faid he; what's the Matter? O my Child! faid the good old Man; give me my Child! I befeech you, Sir.—Why, I thought, fays the 'Squire, that I had fatisfied you about her: Sure you have not the Letter I fent you, written with my own Hand. Yes, yes, but I have, Sir, faid he; and that brought me hither; and I have walked all Night. Poor Man return'd he, with great feeming Compassion, I am sorry for it, truly! Why your Daughter has made a strange Rac-

ket in my Family; and if I thought it would have disturbed you so much, I would have e'en let her gone home; but what I did was to serve her, and you too. She is very safe, I do assure you, Goodman Andrews; and you may take my Honour for it, I would not injure her for the World. Do you think I would, Mrs. Jervis? No, I hope not, Sir, said she.—Hope not! said the poor Man; so do I; but pray, Sir, give me my Child; that is all I dessire; and I'll take care no Clergyman shall some near her.

Why, London is a great way off, said the 'Squire, and I can't send for her back presently. What, then, said he, have you sent my poor Pamela to London? I would not have it said so, reply'd the 'Squire; but I assure you, upon my Honour, she is quite safe and satisfied, and will quickly inform you of it by Letter. She is in a reputable Family, no less than a Bishop's, and is to wait on his Lady, till I get the Matter over

that I mention'd to you.

O how shall I know this? reply'd he.—What! said the 'Squire, pretending Anger, am I to be doubted?—Do you believe I can have any View upon your Daughter? And if I had, do you think I would take such Methods as these to effect it?—Why, surely, Man, thou forgettest whom thou talkest to! O Sir, said he, I beg your Pardon; but consider, my dear Child is in the Case: Let me know but what Bishop, and where; and I will travel to London on foot, to see my Daughter, and then shall be satisfied.

Why, Goodman Andrews, I think thou hast read Romances as well as thy Daughter, and thy Head's turn'd with them. May I not have my Word taken? Do you think once more, I would offer any thing dishonourable to your Daughter? Is there any-thing looks like it?—Pr'ythee, Man, recollect a little who I am; and if I am not to be believed, what signifies talking;

talking! Why, Sir, faid he, pray forgive me; but there is no Harm to fay, What Bishop's, or whereabouts? What, and so you'd go troubling his Lordthip with your impertinent Fears and Stories! Will you be satisfied, if you have a Letter from her within a Week, it may be less, if she be not negligent, to affure you all is well with her? Why that, faid the poor Man, will be some Comfort. Well then, faid the Gentleman, I can't answer for her Negligence, if the don't write: And if the thould fend a Letter to you, Mrs. Fervis, (for I desire not to fee it; I have had Trouble enough about her already) be fure you fend it by a Man and Horse the Moment you receive it. To be fure I will, answered she. Thank your Honour, faid the good Man: And then I must wait with as much Patience as I can for a Week, which will be a Year to me.

I tell you, said the Gentleman, it must be her own Fault, if she don't write; for 'tis what I insisted upon for my own Reputation; and I shan't stir from this House, I assure you, till she is heard from, and that to Satisfaction. God bless your Honour, said the poor Man, as you say and mean Truth. Amen, Amen, Goodman Andrews, said he; you see I am not assaid to say Amen. So, Mrs. Jervis, make the good Man as welcome as you can; and let me have

no Uproar about the Matter.

He then, whispering her, bid her give him a couple of Guineas to bear his Charges home; telling him, he should be welcome to stay there, till the Letter came, if he would; and be a Witness, that he intended honourably, and not to stir from his

House for one while.

The poor old Manstaid and dined with Mrs. Jervis, with some tolerable ease of Mind, in hopes to hear from his beloved Daughter in a few Days; and then accepting the Present, return'd for his own House, and resolved to be as patient as possible.

Vol. I.

Meantime Mrs. Jervis, and all the Family, were in the utmost Grief for the Trick put upon the poor Pamela; and she and the Steward represented it to their Master in as moving Terms as they durst: But were forced to rest satisfied with his general Assurances of intending her no Harm; which, however, Mrs. Jervis little believed from the Pretence he had made in his Letter, of the Correspondence between Pamela and the young Parson; which she knew to be all mere Invention; tho' she durst not say so.

But the Week after, they were made a little more easy by the following Letter, brought by an unknown Hand, and left for Mrs, Jervis; which, how pro-

cur'd, will be shewn in the Sequel.

· Dear Mrs. Jervis,

I HAVE been vilely trick'd, and, instead of being driven by Robin to my dear Father's, I am carry'd off, to where, I have no Liberty to tell. However, I am at present not used hardly, in the main; and I write to beg of you to let my dear Father and Mother (whose Hearts must be well-

• nigh broken) know that I am well, and that I am, and by the Grace of God, ever will be, their

honest, as well as dutiful Daughter, and

'Your obliged Friend,
'PAMELA ANDREWS.

- I must neither send Date nor Place: But have most solemn Assurances of honourable Usage.
 - . This is the only Time my low Estate has been
 - · troublesome to me, since it has subjected me to the
 - Frights I have undergone. Love to your good
 - · Self, and all my dear Fellow-servants. Adieu!

Adieu! but pray for poor PAMELA.

This tho' it quieted not entirely their Apprehensions, was shewn to the whole Family, and to

the Gentleman himfelf, who pretended not to know how it came; and Mrs. Jervis sent it away to the good old Folks; who at first suspected it was forged, and not their Daughter's Hand; but, finding the contrary, they were a little easier to hear she was alive and honest: And having enquired of all their Acquaintance what could be done, and no one being able to put them in away how to proceed, with Effect, on so extraordinary an Occasion, against so rich and so resolute a Gentleman; and being afraid to make Matters worse (tho' they saw plainly enough, that she was in no Bishop's Family, and so mistrusted all the rest of his Story); they applied themselves to Prayers for their poor Daughter, and for a happy Issue to an Affair that almost distracted them

We shall now leave the honest old Pair, praying for their dear Pamela; and return to the Account she herself gives of all this; having written it Journal-wise, to amuse and employ her Time, in hopes some Opportunity might offer to send it to her Friends, and, as was her constant View, that she might afterwards thankfully look back upon the Dangers she had escaped, when they should be happily overblown, as in time she hoped they would be; and that then she might examine, and either approve or repent of her own Conduct in them.

LETTER XXXI.

O my dearest Father and Mother,

Fate, tho' I have no Hope how what I write can be convey'd to your Hands!—I have now nothing to do, but write and weep, and fear and pray! But yet what can I hope for, when I feem to be devoted, as a Victim to the Will of a wicked Violator of all

G 2

the Laws of God and Man!—But gracious Heaven, forgive me my Rashness and Despondency! Olet me not sin against thee; for thou best knowest what is sittest for thy poor Handmaid!—And as thou sufferest not thy poor Creatures to be tempted above what they can bear, I will resign myself to thy good Pleasure: And still, I hope, desperate as my Condition seems, that as these Trials are not of my own seeking, nor the Effects of my Presumption and Vanity, I shall be enabled to overcome them, and, in God's own good Time, be delivered from them.

Thus do I pray imperfectly, as I am forced by my distracting Fears and Apprehensions; and O join with me, my dear Parents!—But, alas! how can you know, how can I reveal to you, the dreadful Situation of your poor Daughter! The unhappy Pamela may be undone (which God forbid, and sooner deprive me of Life!) before you can know

this hard Lot!

O the unparallel'd Wickedness, Stratagems, and Devices, of those who call themselves Gentlemen, yet pervert the Design of Providence, in giving them ample Means to do Good, to their own everlasting Perdition, and the Ruin of poor oppressed Innocence!

But now I will tell you, what has befallen me; and yet, how shall you receive it? Here is no honest John to carry my Letters to you! And, besides I am watched in all my Steps; and no doubt shall be, till my hard Fate may ripen his wicked Projects for my Ruin. I will every Day, however, write my sad State; and some way, perhaps, may be open'd to send the melancholy Scribble to you. But, alas! when you know it, what will it do but aggravate your Troubles! For, O! what can the abject Poor do against the mighty Rich, when they are determined to oppress? Well,

Well, but I must proceed to write what I had hoped to tell you in a few Hours, when I believed I should receive your grateful Blessings, on my Re-

turn to you from fo many Hardships.

I will begin with my Account from the last Letter I wrote you, in which I inclosed my poor Stuff of Verses; and continue it at Times, as I have Opportunity; though, as I said, I know not how it can reach you.

The long-hoped-for Thursday Morning came, when I was to set out. I had taken my Leave of my Fellow-fervants over-night; and a mournful Leave it was to us all: For Men, as well as Women Servants, wept much to part with me; and, for my part, I was overwhelm'd with I ears, and the affecting Instances of their Esteem. They all would have made me little Presents, as Tokens of their Love; but I would not take any-thing from the lower Servants, to be fure. But Mr. Longman would have me accept of several Yards of Holland, and a Silver Snuff-box, and a Gold Ring, which he defired me to keep for his Sake; and he wept over me; but faid, I am fure fo good a Maiden God will blefs; and tho' you return to your poor Father again, and his low Estate, yet Providence will find you out : Remember I tell you so; and one Day, tho' I mayn't live to fee it, you will be rewarded.

I said, O dear Mr. Longman, you make me too rich, and too moody; and yet I must be a Beggar before my Time. For I shall want often to be scribbling (little thinking ir would be my only Employment so soon), and I will beg you, Sir, to savour me with some Paper; and as soon as I get home, I will write you a Letter, to thank you for all your Kindness to me; and a Letter to good Mrs. Jervis

too.

This

This was lucky; for I should have had none else, but at the Pleasure of my rough-natur'd Governess, as I may call her; but now I can write to ease my Mind, tho' I can't send it to you; and write what I please, for she knows not how well I am provided: For good Mr. Longman gave me above forty Sheets of Paper, and a Dozen Pens, and a little Phial of Ink; which last I wrapp'd in Paper, and put in my Pocket; and some Wax and Wasers.

O dear Sir, said I, you have set me up. How shall I requite you? He said, by a Kiss, my sair Mistres: And I gave it very willingly; for he is

a good old Man.

Rachel and Hannah cry'd sadly, when I took my Leave; and Jane, who sometimes used to be a little crossish, and Cicely too, wept sadly, and said they would pray for me; but poor Jane, I doubt, will forget that; for she seldom says her Prayers for

herfelf: More's the Pity!

Then Arthur the Gardener, our Robin the Coachman, and Lincolnshire Robin too, who was to carry me, were very civil; and both had Tears in their Eyes; which I thought then very good-natur'd in Lincolnshire Robin, because he knew but little of me.—But since, I find he might well be concern'd; for he had then his Instructions, it seems, and knew how he was to be a Means to entrap me.

Then our other three Footmen, Harry, Isaac, and Benjamin, and Grooms, and Helpers, were very much affected likewise; and the poor little Scullion-boy, Tommy, was ready to run over for

Grief.

They had got all together over-night, expecting to be differently employ'd in the Morning; and they all begg'd to shake Hands with me, and I kis'd the Maidens, and pray'd to God to bless them all; and thanked them for all their Love and Kindnesses to

me;

me: And indeed I was forced to leave them sooner than I would, because I could not stand it: Indeed I could not. Harry (I could not have thought it; for he is a little wildish, they say) cry'd till he sobb'd again. John, poor honest John, was not then come back from you. But as for the Butler, Mr. Jonathan, he could not stay in Company.

I thought to have told you a deal about this; but I have worse Things to employ my Thoughts.

Mrs. Jervis, good Mrs. Jervis, cry'd all Night long; and I comforted her all I could: And she made me promise, that if my Master went to London to attend Parliament, or to Lincolnshire, I would come and stay a Week with her: And she would have given me Money; but I would not take it.

Well, next Morning came, and I wondered I saw nothing of poor honest John; for I waited to take Leave of him, and thank him for all his Civilities to me and to you: But I suppose he was sent farther by my Master, and so could not return; and I desired to be remembered to him.

And when Mrs. Jervis told me with a fad Heart, the Chariot was ready with four Horses to it, I was just upon sinking into the Ground, tho' I wanted to be with you.

My Master was above-stairs, and never asked to see me. I was glad of it in the main; but he knew, salse Heart as he is! that I was not to be out of his Reach.—O preserve me, Heaven, from his Power, and from his Wickedness!

Well, they were not suffer'd to go with me one Step, as I writ to you before; for he stood at the Window to see me go. And in the Passage to the Gate, out of his Sight, there they stood all of them, in two Rows; and we could say nothing on both Sides, but God bless you! and God bless you! But

G 4

Harry carried my own Bundle, my third Bundle, as I was used to call it, to the Coach, and some Plum-cake, and Diet-bread, made for me overnight, and some Sweet-meats, and six Bottles of Canary Wine, which Mrs. Fervis would make me take in a Basket to chear our Hearts now-and-then, when we got together, as she said. And I kissed all the Maids again, and shook Hands with the Men again; but Mr. Jenathan and Mr. Longman were not there; and then I tripp'd down the Steps to the

Chariot, Mrs. Fervis crying most fadly.

I look'd up when I got to the Chariot, and I faw my Master at the Window, in his Gown; and I curt'sy'd three Times to him very low, and pray'd for him with my Hands lifted up; for I could not speak; indeed I was not able: And he bowed his Head to me, which made me then very glad he would take such Notice of me; and in I stepp'd, and was ready to burst with Grief; and could only, till Robin began to drive, wave my white Handkerchief to them, wet with my Tears: And at last, away he drove, Jehu-like, as they say, out of the Court-yard. And I too soon found I had Cause for greater and deeper Grief.

Well, said I to myself, at this Rate I shall soon be with my dear Father and Mother; and till I had got, as I supposed, half-way, I thought of the good Friends I had left: And when, on stopping for a little Bait to the Horses, Robin told me, I was near half-way, I thought it was high time to wipe my Eyes, and think to whom I was going; as then, alack for me! I thought. So I began to pender what a Meeting I should have with you; how glad you'd both be to see me come safe and innocent to you, after all my Dangers; and so I began to comfort myself, and to banish the other gloomy Side from my Mind; tho', too, it return'd now-and-then;

and-then; for I should be ungrateful not to love them for their Love.

Well, believe I set out about Eight o'Clock in the Morning; and I wonder'd, and wonder'd, when it was about Two, as I saw by a Church-dial in a little Village as we pass'd thro', that I was still more and more out of my Knowledge. Hey-day, thought I, to drive this strange Pace, and to be so long a going a little more than twenty Miles, is very odd! But to be sure, thought I, Robin knows the Way.

At last he stopp'd, and look'd about him, as if he was at a Loss for the Road; and I said, Mr. Rabert, sure you are out of the Way!—I'm assaid I am, said he. But it can't be much; I'll ask the first Person I see. Pray do, said I; and he gave his Horses a Mouthful of Hay; and I gave him some Cake, and two Glasses of Canary Wine; and stopt about half an Hour in all. Then he drove on very

fast again.

I had so much to think of, of the Dangers I now doubted not I had escaped, of the loving Friends I had left, and my best Friends I was going to; and the many Things I had to relate to you; that I the less thought of the Way, till I was startled out of my Meditations by the Sun beginning to set, and still the Man driving on, and his Horses sweating and foaming; and then I began to be alarmed all at once, and call'd to him; and he faid he had horrid ill Luck, for he had come several Miles out of the Way, but was now right, and should get in still before it was quite dark. My Heart began then to misgive me a little, and I was very much fatigu'd; for I had no Sleep for several Nights before, to signify; and at last I said, Pray Mr. Robert, there is a Town before us, what do you call it?—If we are fo much out of the Way, we had better put up there, for the Night comes on apace: And, Lord protect me! bist

thought I, I shall have new Dangers, may-hap, to encounter with the Man, who have escaped the Master—little thinking of the base Contrivance of the latter.—Says he, I am just there: 'Tis but a Mile on one Side of the Town before us.—Nay, said I, I may be mistaken; for it is a good while since I was this Way; but I am sure the Face of the Country here is nothing like what I remember it.

He pretended to be much out of Humour with himself for mistaking the Way, and at last stopp'd at a Farm-house, about two Miles beyond the Village I had seen; and it was then almost dark, and he alighted, and said, We must make Shift here;

for I am quite out.

Lord, thought I, be good to the poor Pamela!

More Trials still !-- What will befal me next!

The Farmer's Wife, and Maid, and Daughter, came out; and the Wife faid, What brings you this Way at this Time of Night, Mr. Robert? And with a Lady too?—Then I began to be frighten'd out of my Wits; and, laying Middle and both Ends together, I fell a crying, and faid, God give me Patience! I am undone for certain!—Pray Mistress, said I, do you know 'Squire B. of Bedfordshire?

The wicked Coachman would have prevented the answering me; but the simple Daughter said, Know his Worship! yes surely! why he is my Father's Landlord—Well, said I, then I am undone, undone for ever!—O wicked Wretch! what have I done to you, said I to the Coachman, to serve me thus?—Vile Tool of a wicked Master?—Faith, said the Fellow, I am sorry this Task was put upon me: But I could not help it. But make the best of it now; here are very civil reputable Folks; and you'll be safe here, I'll assure you.—Let me get out, said I, and I'll walk back to the Town we came thro', late as it is:—For I will not enter here.

Said the Farmer's Wife, you'll be very well used here, I'll assure you, young Gentlewoman, and have better Conveniencies than any where in the Village. I matter not Conveniences, said I: I am betray'd and undone! As you have a Daughter of your own, pity me, and let me know, if your Landlord, as you call him, be here!——No, I'll assure you he is not, said she.

And then came the Farmer, a good-like Sort of Man, grave, and well-behav'd; and spoke to me in such fort, as made me a little pacify'd; and seeing no Help for it, I went in; and the Wise immediately conducted me up-stairs to the best Apartment, and told me, that was mine as long as I staid; and nobody should come near me but when I call'd. I threw myself on the Bed in the Room, tir'd and frighten'd to Death almost; and gave way to the most excessive Fit of Grief that I ever had.

The Daughter came up, and faid, Mr. Robert had given her a Letter to give me; and there it was. I raised myself, and saw it was the Hand and Seal of the wicked Wretch, my Master, directed, to Mrs. Pamela Andrews.—This was a little better than to have him here; tho, if he had, he must have been brought thro' the Air; for I thought I was.

The good Woman (for I began to see Things about a little reputable, and no Guile appearing in them, but rather a Face of Grief for my Grief) offered me a Glass of some cordial Water, which I accepted, for I was ready to sink; and then I sat up in a Chair a little, though very faintish: And they brought me two Candles, and lighted a Brush-wood Fire; and said, If I call'd, I should be waited on instantly; and so left me to ruminate on my sad Condition, and to read my Letter, which I was not able to do presently. After I had a little come to myself, I sound it to contain these Words:

Dear PAMELA,

HE Paffion I have for you, and your Obstinacy, have constrain'd me to act by you in a manner that I know will occasion you great Trouble and Fatigue, both of Mind and Body. Yet, forgive me, my dear Girl; for although I have taken this Step, I will, by all that's good and holy! use you honourably. Suffer not your Fears to transport you to a Behaviour that will be difreputable to us both: For the Place where you'll receive this, is a Farm that belongs to me; and the People civil, honest, and obliging.

You will by this Time be far on your Way to the Place I have allotted for your Abode for a few * Weeks, till I have managed some Affairs, that will make me shew myself to you in a much different Light, than you may possibly apprehend from this rash Action: And to convince you, that I mean no Harm, I do affure you, that the Houfe you are going to, shall be so much at your Command, that even I myfelf will not approach it without Leave from you. So make yourfelf eafy; be discreet and prudent; and a happier Turn shall · reward these your Troubles, than you may at pre-

fefit apprehend: 54 1 (1) 114 (1)

. Meantime I pity the Fatigue you will have, if this come to your Hand in the Place I have directed: And will write to your Father to fatisfy him, that nothing but what is honourable shall be

offer'd to you, by

The said

Your paffionate Admirer (fo I must stile myself) --: me to turn nat; on my flet Con-

Don't think hardly of poor Robin: You have fo poffes'd all my Servants in your Favour, that - I find

- I find they had rather serve you than me;
- and 'tis reluctantly the poor Fellow under-
- ' took this Task; and I was forced to submit
 - to affure him of my honourable Intentions
 - to you, which I am fully refolved to make
 - good, if you compel me not to a contrary Conduct.

I but too well apprehended, that the Letter was only to pacify me for the present; but as my Danger was not so immediate as I had reason to dread, and he had promifed to forbear coming to me, and to, write to you, my dear Parents, to quit your Concern, I was a little more easy than before: And I made shift to eat a little bit of boiled Chicken they had got for me, and drank a Glass of my Sack, and

made each of them do fo too.

But after I had fo done, I was again a little flustered; for in came the Coachman with the Look of a Hangman, I thought, and Madam'd me up strangely; telling me, he would beg me to get ready to pursue my Journey by Five in the Morning, or else he should be late in. I was quite grieved at this; for I began not to dislike my Company, confidering how Things stood; and was in hopes to get a Party among them, and so to put myself into any worthy Protection in the Neighbourhood, rather than go forward.

When he withdrew, I began to tamper with the Farmer and his Wife. But, alas! they had had a Letter delivered them at the same time I had; so securely had Lucifer put it into his Head to do his Work; and they only shook their Heads, and feemed to pity me; and fo I was forced to give over

that Hope.

4. 74.42

However, the good Farmer shewed me his Letter; which I copied as follows: For it discovers the deep Arts of this wicked Master; and how resolved he seems to be on my Ruin, by the Pains he took to deprive me of all Hopes of freeing myfelf from his Power.

Farmer Norton,

T Send to your House, for one Night only, a young Gentlewoman, much against her Will, who has deeply embarked in a Love Affair, which will be her Ruin, as well as the Person's to whom she wants to hetroth herself. I have, to oblige her · Father, ordered her to be carried to one of my · Houses, where she will be well used, to try if by Absence, and Expostulation with both, they can be brought to know their own Interest: And I am fure you will use her kindly for my sake: For excepting this Matter, which she will not own, she does not want Prudence and Discretion. I will · acknowledge any Trouble you shall be at in this · Matter the first Opportunity; and am

· Your Friend and Servant?

He had faid, too cunningly for me, that I would not own this pretended Love Affair; so that he had provided them not to believe me, fay what I would; and as they were his Tenants, who all love him (for he has fome amiable Qualities, and so he had need?), I faw all my Plot cut out, and fo was

forced to fay the less.

I wept bitterly, however; for I found he was too hard for me, as well in his Contrivances as Riches; and so had recourse again to my only Refuge, comforting myself, that God never fails to take the innocent Heart into his Protection, and is alone able to baffle and confound the Devices of the Mighty. Nay, the Farmer was so prepossessed with

with the Contents of this Letter, that he began to praise his Care and Concern for me, and to advise me against entertaining Addresses without my Friends Advice and Consent; and made me the Subject of a Lesson for his Daughter's Improvement. So I was glad to shut up this Discourse; for I saw

I was not likely to be believed.

I fent, however, to tell my Driver, that I was fo fatigued, I could not fet out so soon the next Morning. But he insisted upon it, and said, It would make my Day's Journey the lighter; and I found he was a more faithful Servant to his Master, notwithstanding what he wrote of his Reluctance, than I could have wished: So I saw still more and more, that all was deep Dissimulation, and Contrivance worse and worse.

Indeed I might have shewn them his Letter to me, as a full Confutation of his to them; but I faw no Probability of engaging them in my behalf, and so thought it signified little, as I was to go away so soon, to enter more particularly into the Matter with them; and besides, I saw they were not inclinable to let me stay longer, for sear of disobliging him: So I went to Bed, but had very little Rest: And they would make their Servant-Maid bear me Company in the Chariot five Miles, early in the Morning, and she was to walk back.

I had contrived in my Thoughts, when I was on my Way in the Chariot, on Friday Morning, that when we came into some Town to bait, as he must do for the Horses sake, I would, at the Inn, apply myself, if I saw I any-way could, to the Mistress of the Inn, and tell her the Case, and to result to go farther, having nobody but this wicked Coachman to contend with.

Well

Well, I was very full of this Project, and in great Hopes, some-how or other, to extricate myself this way. But, oh! the artful Wretch had provided for even this last Resuge of mine; for when we came to put up at a large Town on the Way, to eat a Morsal for Dinner, and I was fully resolved to execute my Project, who should be at the Inn that he put up at, but the wicked Mrs. Fewkes expecting me! And her Sister-in-law was the Mistress of it; and she had provided a little Entertainment for me.

And this I found, when I desired, as soon as I came in, to speak with the Mistress of the House. She came to me; and I said, I am a poor unhappy young Body, that want your Advice and Assistance; and you seem to be a good fort of Gentlewoman, that would assist an oppressed innocent Person. Yes, Madam, said she, I hope you guess right; and I have the Happiness to know something of the Matter, before you speak. Pray call my Sister fewkes.—Jewkes! Jewkes! thought 1; I have heard of that Name; I don't like it.

Then the wicked Creature appeared, whom I had never seen but once before, and I was terrified out of my Wits. No Stratagem, thought I, not one! for a poor innocent Girl; but every thing to turn out

against me; that is hard indeed!

So I began to pull in my Horns, as they fay; for I faw I was now worse off than at the Farmer's.

The naughty Woman came up to me with an Air of Confidence, and kissed me: See, Sister, said she, here's a charming Creature! Would she not tempt the best Lord in the Land to run away with her? O frightful! thought I; here's an Avowal of the Matter at once: I am now gone, that's certain. And so was quite silent and consounded; and seeing no Help for it (for she would not part with me put of her Sight), I was forced to set out with her

in the Chariot; for she came thither on Horseback with a Man-Servant, who rode by us the rest of the Way, leading her Horse: And now I gave over all Thoughts of Redemption, and was in a despond-

ing Condition indeed.

Well, thought I, here are strange Pains taken to ruin a poor innocent, helpless, and even worthless young Body. This Plot is laid too deep, and has been too long hatching, to be bassled, I fear. But then I put my Trust in God, who I know was able to do every-thing for me, when all other possible Means should fail: And in him I was resolved to conside.

You may see—(Yet, oh! that kills me; for I know not whether ever you can see what I now write or no—Else you will see) what sort of Woman this Mrs. Yewkes is, compared to good Mrs.

Tervis, by this:

Every now-and-then she would be staring in my Face, in the Chariot, and squeezing my Hand, and saying, Why, you are very pretty, my silent Dear! And once she offered to kiss me. But I said, I don't like this Sort of Carriage, Mrs. Jewkes; it is not like two Persons of one Sex. She sell a laughing very considently, and said, That's prettily said, I vow! Then thou hadst rather be kissed by the other Sex? I sackins, I commend thee for that!

I was fadly teazed with her Impertinence, and bold Way; but no wonder; she was an Innkeeper's Housekeeper, before she came to my Master; and those fort of Creatures don't want Considence, you know: And indeed she made nothing to talk boldly on twenty Occasions; and said two or three times, when she saw the Tears every now-and-then, as we rid, trickle down my Cheeks, I was forely hurt, truly, to have the handsomest and finest young Gentleman in five Counties in Love with me!

So I find I am got into the Hands of a wicked Procures; and if I was not safe with good Mrs. Fervis, and where every-body loved me, what a dreadful Prospect have I now before me, in the Hands of a Woman that seems to delight in Filthiness!

O dear Sir! what shall I do! What shall I do!— Surely, I shall never be equal to all these Things!

About eight at Night, we entered the Court-yard of this handsome, large, old, and lonely Mansion, that looks made for Solitude and Mischief, as I thought, by its Appearance, with all its brown nodding Horrors of lofty Elms and Piles about it: And here, said I to myself, I fear, is to be the Scene of my Ruin, unless God protect me, who is all-sufficient!

I was very fick at entering it, partly from Fatigue, and partly from Dejection of Spirits: And Mrs. Jewkes got me fome mull'd Wine, and seemed mighty officious to welcome me thither: And while she was absent, ordering the Wine, the wicked Robin came in to me, and said, I beg a thousand Pardons for my Part in this Affair, since, I see your Grief, and your Distress; and I do assure you, that I am forry it fell to my Task.

Mighty well, Mr. Robert! faid I; I never faw an Execution but once, and then the Hangman asked the poor Creature's Pardon, and wiped his Mouth, as you do, and pleaded his Duty, and then calmly tuck'd up the Criminal. But I am no Criminal, as you all know: And if I could have thought it my Duty to obey a wicked Master in his unlawful Commands, I had saved you all the Merit of this vile Service.

I am forry, said he, you take it so: But everyhody don't think alike. Well, said I, you have done your Part, Mr. Robert, towards my Ruin, very faithfaithfully; and will have Cause to be sorry, maybe, at the Long-run, when you shall see the Mischief that comes of it.—Your Eyes were open, and you know I was to be carried to my Father's, and that I was barbarously tricked and betrayed; and I can only, once more, thank you for your Part of it. God forgive you!

So he went away a little sad. What have you said to Robin, Madam? said Mrs. Fewkes (who came in as he went out): The poor Fellow's ready to cry. I need not be afraid of your following his Example, Mrs. Fewkes, said I: I have been telling him, that he has done his Part to my Ruin: And he now can't help it! So his Repentance does me

no Good; I wish it may him.

I'll assure you, Madam, said she, I should be as ready to cry as he, if I should do you any harm. It is not in his Power to help it now, said I; but your Part is to come, and you may choose whether you'll contribute to my Ruin or not—Why, look ye, look ye, Madam, said she, I have a great Notion of doing my Duty to my Master; and therefore you may depend upon it, if I can do that, and serve you, I will: But you must think, if your Desire, and his Will, come to clash once, I shall do as he bids me, let it be what it will.

Pray, Mrs. Jewkes, faid I, don't Madam me so: I am but a filly poor Girl, set up by the Gambol of Fortune, for a May-game; and now am to be Something, and now Nothing, just as that thinks fit to sport with me: And let you and me talk upon a Foot together; for I am a Servant inserior to you, and so much the more, as I am turned out of

Place.

Ay, ay, fays she, I understand something of the Matter; you have so great Power over my Master, that you may be soon Mistress of us all; and so I would

would oblige you, if I could. And I must and will call you Madam; for I am instructed to shew you

all Respect, I'll assure you.

Who instructed you to do so? said I. Who! my Master, to be sure, said she. Why, said I, how can that be? You have not seen him lately. No, that's true, said she; but I have been expecting you here some time (O the deep-laid Wickedness! thought I); and besides, I have a Letter of Instructions by Robin; but, may-be, I should not have said so much. If you would shew them to me, said I, I should be able to judge how far I could, or could not, expect Favour from you, consistent with your Duty to our Master. I beg your Pardon, sair Mistress, for that, said she; I am sufficiently instructed, and you may depend upon it, I will observe my Orders; and so far as they will let me, so far will I oblige you; and there's an End of it.

Well, said I, you will not, I hope, do an unlawful or wicked thing, for any Master in the World. Look ye, said she, he is my Master; and if he bids me do any thing that I can do, I think I ought to do it; and let him, who had Power to command me, look to the Lawfulness of it. Why, said I, suppose he should bid you cut my Throat, would you do it? There's no Danger of that, said she; but to be sure I would not; for then I should be hanged; for that would be Murder. Well, said I, and suppose he should resolve to ensure a poor young Creature, and ruin her, would you assist him in that? For to rob a Person of her Virtue,

is worse than cutting her Throat.

Why now, says she, how strangely you talk! Are not the two Sexes made for one another? And is it not natural for a Gentleman to love a pretty Woman? And suppose he can obtain his Desires, is that so bad as cutting her Throat? And then the Wretch fell a laughing, and talk'd most impertinently, and shewed

me, that I had nothing to expect from her Virtue or Conscience: And this gave me great Mortification? for I was in hopes of working upon her by degrees.

So we ended our Discourse here, and I bid her shew me where I must lie.—Why, said she, lie where you list, Madam; I can tell you, I must lie with you for the present. For the present! said I, and Torture then wrung my Heart!—But is it in your Instructions, that you must lie with me? Yes, indeed, said she. I am sorry for it, said I. Why, said she, I am wholsome, and cleanly too, I'll assure you. Yes, said I, I don't doubt that; but I love to lie by my-self. How so? said she, was not Mrs. Jervis your Bedsellow at t'other House?

Well, said I, quite sick of her, and my Condition, you must do as you are instructed, I think. I can't help myself, and am a most miserable Creature. She repeated her insufferable Nonsense, Mighty miserable indeed, to be so well beloved by one of

the finett Gentlemen in England!

I am now come down in my Writing to this present SATURDAY, and a deal I have written.

Y wicked Bedfellow has very punctual Orders, it feems; for the locks me and herfelf in, and ties the two Keys (for there is a double Door to the Room) about her wrift, when the goes to Bed. She talks of the House having been attempted to be broken open two or three times; whether to fright me, I can't tell; but it makes me fearful; tho' not so much as I should be, if I had not other and greater Fears.

I slept but little last Night, and got up, and pretended to sit by the Window which looks into the spacious Gardens; but I was writing all the time, from Break of Day, to her getting up, and after,

when she was absent.

There are, besides, of Servants, the Coachman Robert, a Groom, a Helper, a Footman; all but Robert (and he is accessary to my Ruin) strange Creatures, that promise nothing; and all likewise devoted to this Woman. The Gardener looks like a good honest Man; but he is kept at a Distance, and seems reserved.

I wondered I saw not Mr. Williams the Clergyman, but would not ask after him, apprehending it might give her some Jealousy; but when I had beheld the rest, he was the only one I had hopes of; for I thought his Cloth would set him above assisting in my Ruin—But in the Asternoon he came; for it seems he has a little Latin School in the neighbouring Village, which he attends; and this brings him in a little Matter, additional to my Master's Favour, till something better salls, of which he has Hopes.

He is a sensible sober young Gentleman; and when I saw him, I confirmed myself in my Hopes of him; for he seemed to take great Notice of my Distress and Grief (for I could not hide it); tho' he appeared fearful of Mrs. Jewkes, who watched all our Motions and Words.

He has an Apartment in the House; but is mostly at a Lodging in the Town, for Conveniency of his little School; only on Saturday Afternoons and Sundays: And he preaches sometimes for the Minister of the Village, which is about Three Miles off.

I hope to go to Church with him To-morrow: Sure it is not in her Instructions to deny me! He can't have thought of every thing! And something may strike out for me there.

I have

I have ask'd her for a Feint (because she sha'n't think I am so well provided), to indulge me with Pen and Ink, tho' I have been using my own so freely, when her Absence would let me; for I begged to be lest to myself as much as possible. She says she will let me have it; but then I must promite not to send any Writing out of the House, without her seeing it. I said, it was only to divert my Grief, when I was by myself, as I desired to be; for I loved Writing as well as Reading; but I had nobody to

fend to, the knew well enough.

No, not at present, may-be, said she; but I am told you are a great Writer, and it is in my Instructions to see all you write: So, look you here, faid she, I will let you have a Pen and Ink, and two Sheets of Paper; for this Employment will keep you out of worfe Thoughts: But I must see them always when I ask, written or not written. That's very hard faid I; but may I not have to myfelf the Closet in the Room where we lie, with the Key to lock up my Things? I believe I may consent to that, faid she; and I will set it in Order for you, and leave the Key in the Door. And there is a Spinnet too, faid she; if it be in tune, you may play to divert you now-and-then; for I know my old Lady learnt you: And below is my Master's Library? you may take out what Books you will,

And indeed these and my Writing will be all my Amusement? for I have no Work given me to do, and the Spinnet, if in Tune, will not find my Mind, I am sure, in Tune to play upon it. But I went directly and picked out some Books from the Library, with which I filled a Shelf in the Closet she gave me Possession of; and from these I hope to recieve Improvement, as well as Amusement. But no sooner was her Back turned, than I set about hiding a Pen of my own here, and another there, for fear I should come to be denied, and a little of my Ink in a broken

China Cup, and a little in another Cup; and a Sheet of Paper here-and-there among my Linen, with a little Wax, and a few Wafers, in feveral Places, lest I should be searched; and something, I thought, might happen to open a way for my Deliverance, by these or some other Means. O the Pride, thought I, I shall have, if I can secure my Innocence, and escape the artful Wiles of this wicked Master! For, if he comes hither, I am undone, to be sure! For this naughty Woman will assist him, rather than fail, in the worst of his Attempts; and he'll have no Occasion to send her out of the Way, as he would have done Mrs. Fervis once. So I must set all my little Wits at Work.

It is a Grief to me to write, and not to be able to fend to you what I write; but now it is all the Diversion I have, and if God will favour my Escape with my Innocence, as I trust he graciously will, for all these black Prospects, with what Pleasure

shall I read them afterwards!

I was going to fay, Pray for your dutiful Daughter, as I used; but, alas! you cannot know my Distress, tho' I am sure I have your Prayers: And I will write on, as Things happen, that if a way should open, my Scribble may be ready to be sent: For what I do, must be at a Jirk, to be sure.

O how I want fuch an obliging honest-hearted

Man as John!

I am now come to SUNDAY.

ELL, here is a fad thing! I am denied by this barbarous Woman to go to Church, as I had built upon I might: And she has huffed poor Mr. Williams all to-pieces, for pleading for me. I find he is to be forbid the House, if she pleases. Poor Gentleman! all his Dependance is upon my Master, who has a very good Living for him, if the Incumbent die; and he has kept his Bed these sour Months, of old Age and Dropsy.

He pays me great Respect, and I see pities me; and would perhaps assist my Escape from these Dangers: But I have nobody to plead for me; and why should I wish to ruin a poor Gentleman, by engaging him against his Interest? Yet one would do anything to preserve one's Innocence; and Providence would, perhaps, make it up to him!

O judge (but how shall you see what I write!) of my distracted Condition, to be reduced to such a Pass as to desire to lay Traps for Mankind!—But he wants sadly to say something to me, as he whis-

peringly hinted.

The wretch (I think I will always call her the Wretch henceforth) abuses me more and more. I was but talking to one of the Maids just now, indeed a little to tamper with her by degrees; and she popt upon us, and said—Nay, Madam, don't offer to tempt poor innocent Country Maidens from doing their Duty. You wanted, I hear, she should take a Walk with you. But I charge you, Nan, never stir with her, nor obey her, without letting me know it, in the smallest Trisles.—I say, walk with you! and where would you go, I tro'? Why barbarous Mrs. Jewkes, said I, only to look a little up the Elmwalk, since you would not let me go to Church.

Nan, faid the, to shew me how much they were all in her Power, pull off Madam's Shoes, and bring them to me. I have taken care of her others.—
Indeed she sha'n't, faid I.—Nay, faid Nan, but I must if my Mistress bids me: So pray, Madam, don't hinder me. And so indeed (would you believe it?) she took my shoes off, and left me barefoot: And, for my Share, I have been so frightened at this, that I have not Power even to relieve my Mind by my Tears. I am quite stupished to be sure!—Here I

was forced to leave off.

Now I will give you a Picture of this Wretch: She is a broad, squat, pursy, fat Thing, quite ugly, if any-thing human can be to called; about forty Years old. She has a huge Hand, and an Arm as thick as my Waist, I believe. Her Nose is flat and crooked, and her Brows grow down over her Eyes; a dead spiteful, grey, goggling Eye, to be sure she has. And her Face is flat and broad; and as to Colour, looks like as if it had been pickled a Month in Saltpetre: I dare fay the drinks:——She has a hoarse, man like Voice, and is as thick as she's long; and yet looks fo deadly strong, that I am afraid she would dash me at her Foot in an Instant, if I was to vex her .- So that with a Heart more ugly than her Face, she frightens me fadly; and I am undone, to be fure, if God does not protect me; for she is very, very wicked—indeed she is.

This is poor helpless Spite in me:——But the Picture is too near the Truth notwithstanding. She sends me a Message just now, that I shall have my Shoes again, if I will accept of her Company to walk with me in the Garden.—To waddle with me,

rather, thought I.

Well, 'tis not my Business to quarrel with her downright. I shall be watched the narrower, if I do; and so I will go with the hated Wretch.—O for my dear Mrs. Jervis! or rather, to be safe with my dear Father and Mother.

Oh! I am out of my Wits for Joy! Just as I have got my Shoes on, I am told, John, hon st John, is come on Horseback!—A Bleffing on his faithful Heart! What Joy is this! But I'll tell you more by-and-by. I must not let her know, I am so glad to see this dear blessed John, to be sure!——Alas! but he looks sad, as I see him out of the Window! What can be the Matter!—I hope my dear

dear Parents are well, and Mrs. Jervis, and Mr. Longman, and every-body, my naughty Master not excepted;—for I wish him to live, and repent of all his Wickedness to poor me.

O dear Heart! what a World do we live in!— I am now come to take up my Pen again: But I am in a fad Taking truly! Another puzzling Trial, to

te sure!

Here was John, as I said; and the poor Man came to me, with Mrs. Yewkes, who whispered, that I would fay nothing about the Shoes, for my own fake, as fhe faid. The poor man faw my Diffress, by my red Eyes, and my haggard Looks, I suppose: for I have had a fad Time of it, you must needs think; and tho' he would have hid it, if he could, yet his own Eyes ran over: Oh Mrs. Pamala! faid he; Oh Mrs. Pamala! Well honest Fellow-servant, said I, I cannot help it at present: I am obliged to your Honesty and Kindness, to be sure; and then he wept more. Said I (for my Heart was ready to break to fee his Grief; for it is a touching thing to see a Man cry). Tell me the worst! Is my Master coming? No, no, said he, and sobb'd-Well, faid I, is there any News of my poor Father and Mother? How do they do?—I hope well, faid he? I know nothing to the Contrary. There is no Mishap, I hope, to Mrs. Fervis or to Mr. Longman, or my Fellow-servants! No-said he, poor Man! with a long N-o, as if his Heart would burst. Well, thank God then! faid I.

The Man's a Fool, said Mrs. Jewkes, I think: What ado is here! why, sure thou'rt in Love, John. Dost thou not see young Madam is well? What ails thee, man? Nothing at all, said he; but I am such a Fool, as to cry for Joy to see good Mrs.

Pamela: But I have a Letter for you.

H 2

148 PAMELA; Or,

I took it, and faw it was from my Master; so I put it in my Pocket. Mrs. Jewkes, said I, you need not I hope see this. No, no, said she, I see whose it is, well enough; or else, may be, I must have insisted on reading it.

And here is one for you, Mrs. Jewkes, faid he; but yours faid he to me, requires an Answer, which I must carry back early in the Morning, or To-night,

if I can.

You have no more, John, said Mrs. Jewkes, for Mrs. Pamela, have you? No said he, I have not; but every-body's kind Love and Service. Ay, to us both, to be sure, said she. John, said I, I will read the Letter, and pray take care of yourself; for you are a good Man, God bless you; and I rejoice to see you, and hear from you all. But I longed to say more; only that nasty Mrs. Jewkes.—

So I went up, and locked myself in my Closet, and opened the Letter; and this is a Copy of it:

· My dearest PAMELA,

Send purposely to you on an Affair that con-

chiefly for your fake. I am conscious that I have rocceded by you in such a manner as may justly

alarm your Fears, and give Concern to your

honest Friends: And all my Pleasure is, that I

can and will make you Amends for the Disturbance

Leve given you. As I promis'd, I fent to your

Father the Day after your Departure, that he might not be too much concerned for you and

affured him by my Honour to you; and made

an Excuse, such an one as ought to have satisfied

him, for your not coming to him. But this was

onot sufficient, it seems; for he, poor Man! came

to me next Morning, and fet my Family almost

3

in an Uprear about you.

O my dear Girl! what Trouble has not your Dostinacy given me, and yourself too! I had no way to pacify him, but to promife, that he should ' see a Letter written from you to Mrs. Fervis, to

fatisfy him you are well.

Now all my Care in this Case is for your aged Parents, left they should be touched with too fatal a Grief; and for you, whose Duty and Affection for them I know to be fo strong and laudable: for this Reason I beg you will write a few Lines to them, and let me prescribe the Form; which 'I have done, putting myself as near as I can in your place, and expressing your Sense, with a Warmth that I doubt will have too much pof-· sessed you.

After what is done, and which cannot now be helped, but which, I affure you, shall turn out honourably for you, I expect not to be refused;

because I cannot possibly have any View in it,

but to fatisfy your Parents; which is more your " Concern than mine; and so I must beg you will

one alter one Tittle of the underneath. If you do, it will be impossible for me to fend it, or that it

6 should answer the good End I propose by it.

· I have promised, that I will not approach you ' without your Leave: If I find you easy, and not attempting to dispute or avoid your present Lot, I will keep to my Word, altho' 'tis a Difficulty ' upon me. Nor shall your restraint last long:

· For I will affure you, that I am refolved very foon to convince you of my good Intentions, and with

what Ardor I am

Yours, &c.

Louis will be I sould be the ...

The Letter he prescribed for me was this:

· Dear Mrs. JERVIS,

Have instead of being driven by Robin, to my dear Father's, been carried off, to where I have no Liberty to tell. However, at present, I am not

- us'd hardly; and I write to beg you to let my
- dear Father and Mother, whose Hearts must be well inigh broken, know that I am well; and that I am,
- and, by the Grace of God, ever will be, their

honest, as well as dutiful Daughter, and

. Your obliged Friend.

• I must neither send Date nor Place; but • have most solemn Assurances of honourable

· Ufage,'

I know not what to do on this most strange Request and Occasion. But my Heart bled so much for you, my dear Father, who had taken the Pains to go yourself, and inquire after your poor Daughter, as well as for my dear Mother, that I resolved to write, and pretty much in the above * Form, that it might be sent to pacify you, till I could let you, some how or other, know the true State of the Matter. And I wrote thus to my strange wicked Master himself:

SIR,

I F you knew but the Anguish of my Mind, and how much I suffer by your dreadful Usage of me, you would surely pity me, and consent to my Deliverance. What have I done, that I should be

^{*} See p. 122, her Alterations are in a different Character.

be the only Mark of your Cruelty? I can have no Hope, no Defire of living left me, because I cannot have the least Dependance, after what has passed, upon your solemn Assurances.—It is impossible they should be consistent with the dishonourable Methods you take.

Nothing but your Promise of not seeing me here in my deplorable Bondage, can give me the

least Ray of Hope.

Don't, I beseech you, drive the poor distressed Pamela upon a Rock, that may be the Destruction both of her Soul and Body! You don't know, Sir, how dreadfully I dare, weak as I am of Mind and Intellect, when my Virtue is in Danger. And, O! hasten my Deliverance, that a poor unworthy Creature, below the Notice of such a Gentleman as you, may not be made the Sport of a high Condition, for no Reason in the World, but because the is not able to desend herself nor

but because she is not able to defend herself, nor

has a Friend that can right her.

I have, Sir, in part to shew my Obedience to you, but indeed, I own, more to give Lase to the Minds of my poor distressed Parents, whose Poverty, one would think, should screen them from Violences of this Sort, as well as their poor Daughter, followed pretty much the Form you have prescribed for me, in the Letter to Mrs. Fervis; and the Alterations I have made (for I could not help a few) are of such a Nature, as, the they shew my Concern a little, yet must answer the End you are pleased to say you propose by this Letter.

'For God's sake, good Sir, pity my lowly Condition, and my present great Misery; and let me join with all the rest of your Servants to bless that Goodness, which you have extended to every one,

but the poor, afflicted, heart-broken,

PAMELA.

I thought, when I had written this Letter, and that which he had prescribed, it would look like placing a Confidence in Mrs. Jewkes, to shew them to her; and I shewed her, at the same Time, my Master's Letter to me; for I believed, the Value he expressed for me, would give me Credit with one who professed in every-thing to serve him, right or wrong; though I had so little Reason, I fear, to. pride myself in it: And I was not mistaken; for it, has seemed to influence her not a little, and she is, at prefent, mighty obliging, and runs over in my Praises; but is the less to be minded, because she praises as much as the Author of my Miseries, and his benourable Intentions, as the calls them; for I fee, that she is capable of thinking, as I fear he does, that every-thing that makes for his wicked Will is honourable, tho' to the Ruin of the Innocent. Pray God I may find it otherwise! Tho', I hope, whatever the wicked Gentleman may intend, that I shall be at last rid of her impertinent bold way of Talk, when she seems to think, from his Letter, that he means konourably.

I am now come to MONDAY, the 5th Day of my Bondage and Misery.

I WAS in hope to have an Opportunity to fee John, and have a little private Talk with him, before he went away; but it could not be. The poor Man's excessive Sorrow made Mrs. Jewkes take it into her Head, to think he loved me; and so she brought up a Message to me from him this Morning, that he was going. I desired he might come up to my Closet, as I called it; and she came with him. The honest Man, as I thought him, was as full of Concern as before, at taking Leave: And I gave him two Letters, the one for Mrs. Jervis, inclosed in another for my Master: But Mrs. Jewkes would

would see me seal them up, lest I should inclose anything else.—I was surprized, at the Man's going away, to see him drop a Bit of Paper, just at the Head of the Stairs, which I took up without being observed by Mrs. Jewkes: But I was a thousand times more surprised, when I returned to my Closet, and opening it, read as follows:

Good Mrs. PAMELA,

I AM grieved to tell you how much you have been deceived and betrayed, and that by fuch a vile Dog as I. Little did I think it would come to this. But I must say, if ever there was a Rogue in the World, it is me. I have all a long shewed ' your Letters to my Master: He employed me for that Purpose; and he saw every one, before I carried them to your Father and Mother; and then sealed them up, and sent me with them. I had some Business that way, but not half so often as I pretended: And as foon as I heard how it was, I was ready to hang myself. You may well think I could not stand in your Presence. O vile, ' vile Wretch, to bring you to this! If you are ruined, I am the Rogue that caused it. All the Justice I can do you, is to tell you, you are in vile Hands; and I am afraid will be undone in ' spite of all your sweet Innocence; and I believe I 'shall never live, after I know it. If you can for-' give me, you are exceeding good; but I shall ' never forgive myself, that's certain. Howsomever, it will do you no Good to make this known; and may hap I may live to do you Service. If I can, I will. I am fure I ought .- Mafter kept your last two or three Letters, and did not send them at all. I am the most abandoned Wretch of Wretches.

J. ARNOLD.

You see your Undoing has been long hatching.
 Pray take care of your sweet Self. Mrs.

· Jewkes is a Devil : But in my Master's t'other

· House you have not one false Heart, but myself.

Out upon me for a Villain!'

My dear Father and Mother, when you come to this Place, I make no doubt your Hair will stand on End as mine does!—O the Deceitfulness of the Heart of Man!—This John, that I took to be the honestest of Men; that you took for the same; that was always praising you to me, and me to you, and for nothing so much as for our honest Hearts; this very Fellow was all the while a vile Hypocrite, and a perfidious Wretch, and helping to carry on my Ruin.

But he fays so much of himself, that I will only sit down with this sad Resection, That Power and Riches never want Tools to promote their vilest Ends, and there is nothing so hard to be known as the Heart of Man:—I can but pity the poor Wretch, since he seems to have great Remorse, and I believe it best to keep his Wickedness secret. If it lies in my way, I will encourage his Penitence; for I may

possibly make some Discoveries by it.

One thing I should mention in this Place; he brought down, in a Portmanteau, all the Cloaths and Things my Lady and Master had given me, and moreover two Veluet Hoods, and a Velvet Scarf, that used to be worn by my Lady; but I have no

Comfort in them, or any-thing else.

Mrs. Jewkes had the Portmanteau brought into my Closet, and she shewed me what was in it; but then locked it up, and said, she would let me have what I would out of it, when I asked; but if I had the Key, it might make me want to go abroad, may-be; and so the consident Woman put it in her Pocket.

I gave myself over to sad Reflections upon this strange and surprising Discovery of John's and wept much for him, and for myself too; for now I see, as he fays, my Ruin has been long hatching, that I can make no doubt what my Master's honourable Professions will end in. What a heap of hard Names does the poor Fellow call himself! But what must they deserve, then, who set him to work? O what has this wicked Master to answer for, to be so corrupt himself, and to corrupt others, who would have been all innocent; and to carry on a poor Plot. I am sure, for a Gentleman, to ruin a poor Creature, who never did him harm, nor wished him any; and who can still pray for his Happiness, and

his Repentance?

I can't but wonder what these Gentlemen, as they are called, can think of themselves for these vile Doings! Yohn had some Inducement; for he hoped to please his Master, who rewarded him, and was: bountiful to him; and the same may be said, bad as she is, for this same odious Mrs. Jowkes. But what Inducement has my Master for taking so much Pains to do the Devil's Work for him?-If he loves me, as 'tis falfly called, must he therefore lay Traps for me, to ruin me, and make me as bad as himself? I cannot imagine what Good the Undoing of fuch a poor Creature as I can procure him! -To be fure, I am a very worthless Body. People indeed fay I am handsome; but if I was so, should not a Gentleman prefer an honest Servant to a guilty Harlot? And must he be more earnest to seduce me, because I dread of all things to be seduced, and would rather lose my Life than my Honesty?

Well, there are strange things to me! I cannot account for them, for my Share; but fure nobody will say, that these fine Gentlemen have any Tempter but their own wicked Wills !—This naughty Master could run away from me, when he apprehended his Servants might discover his vile Attempts upon me in that sad Closet Affair; but is it not strange, that he should not be assaid of the All-seeing Eye, from which even that base, plotting Heart of his, in its most secret Motions, could not be hid?—But what avail me these forrowful Resections? He is and will be wicked, and designs me a Victim to his lawless Attempts, if the God in whom I trust, and to whom I hourly pray, prevent it not.

TUESDAY and WEDNESDAY.

HAVE been hindered by this wicked Woman's watching me so close, from writing on Tuesday; and so I will put both these Days together. I have been a little Turn with her for an Airing, in the Chariot, and walked several times in the Garden;

but have always her at my Heels.

Mr. Williams came to fee us, and took a Walk with us once; and while her Back was just turned (encourag'd by the Hint he had before given me). I faid, Sir, I fee two Tiles upon that Parsley-bed; might not one cover them with Mould, with a Note between them, on Occasion?—Agood Hint, said he; let that Sunslower by the Back-door of the Garden be the Place; I have a Key to the Door; for it is my nearest Way to the Town.

So I was forced to begin. O what Inventions will Necessity push us upon! I hugged myself at the Thought; and she coming to us, he said, as if he was continuing a Discourse we were in; No, not extraordinary pleasant. What's that? what's that? faid Mrs. Jewkes.—Only, said he, the Town I'm saying, is not very pleasant. No, indeed, said she, 'tis not; 'tis a poor Town, to my thinking. Are there any Gentry in it? said I. And so we chat-

ted on about the Town, to deceive her. But my

Deceit intended no Hurt to any-body.

We then talked of the Garden, how large and pleasant, and the like; and sat down on the tusted slope of the fine Fish-pond, to see the Fishes play upon the Surface of the Water; and she said, I

should angle if I would.

I wish, said I, you'd be so kind to setch me a Rod and Baits. Pretty Mistress! said she—I know better than that, I'll assure you, at this time.—I mean no Harm, said I, indeed. Let me tell you, said she, I know none who have their Thoughts more about them than you. A body ought to look to it where you are. But we'll angle a little Tomorrow. Mr. Williams, who is much asraid of her, turn'd the Discourse to a general Subject. I faunter'd in, and left them to talk by themselves; but he went away to Town, and she was soon after me.

I had got to my Pen and Ink; and I faid, I want fome Paper, Mrs. Tewkes, (putting what I was about in my Bosom): You know I have written two Letters, and fent them by John (O how his Name poor guilty Fellow, grieves me!). Well, faid she, you have some left; one Sheet did for those two Letters. Yes, said I; but I used half another for a Cover, you know; and fee how I have scribbled the other half; and so I shewed her a Parcel of broken Scraps of Verses, which I had try'd to recollect, and had written purposely that fhe might fee, and think me usually employed to such idle Purposes. Ay, said she, so you have; well, I'll give you two Sheets more; but let me see how you dispose of them, either written on blank. Well, thought I, I hope still Argus, to be too hard for thee. Now Argus, the Poets fay, had a hundred Eyes, and was fet to watch with them all, as the does.

She brought me the Paper, and said, Now, Madam, let me see vou write something. I will, said I; and took the Pen and wrote, "I wish Mrs. "Fewkes would be so good to me, as I would be to her, if I had it in my Power."—That's pretty now said she; well, I hope I am; but what then? "why then (wrote I) she would do me the Fa. "vour to let me know, what I have done to be made her Prisoner; and what she thinks is to be come of me." Well, and what then? said she. "Why then, of consequence (scribbled I), she would let me see her instructions, that I may

"know how far to blame, or acquit her."

Thus I fooled on, to shew her my Fondness for Scribbling; for I had no Expectation of any Good from her; that so she might suppose I employed myfelf, as I faid, to no better purpose at other Times: For the will have it, that I am upon some Plot, I am fo filent, and love fo much to be by myself.— She would have made me write on a little further, No, faid I; you have not answered me. Why, faid she, what can you doubt, when my Master himfelf affures you of his Honour? Ay, faid I; but lay your Hand to your Heart, Mrs. Tewkes, and tell me, if you yourself believe him. Yes, said she, to be sure I do. But, faid I, what do you call Honour? Why, faid she, What does he call Honour, think you? -Ruin! Shame! Difgrace! faid I, I fear. Pho! Pho! faid she; if you have any Doubt about it, he can best explain his own Meaning :- I'll send him Word to come and fatisfy you, if you will.— Horrid Creature! faid I, all in a Fright-Canst thou not stab me to the Heart! I'd rather thou wouldst, than fay such another Word !- But I hope there is no Thought of his coming.

She had the Wickedness to say, No, no; he don't intend to come, as I know of:—But if I was he,

I would

I would not be long away. What means the Woman? faid I.—Mean! faid she (turning it off); why I mean, I would come, if I was he, and put an end to all your Fears—by making you as happy as you wish. 'Tis out of his Power, said I to make me happy, great and rich as he is! but by leaving me innocent, and giving me Liberty to go to my dear Father and Mother.

She went away foon after, and I ended my Letter, in hopes to have an Opportunity to lay it in the appointed Place. So I went to her, and faid; I suppose, as it is not dark, I may take another Turn in the Garden. 'Tis too late, said she; but if you will go, don't stay; and, Nan, see and at-

tend Madam, as she called me.

So I went towards the Pond, the Maid following me, and dropt purposely my Hussy: and when I came near the Tiles, I said, Mrs. Anne, I have dropt my Hussy; be so kind to look for it; I had it by the Pond-side. She went back to look, and I slipt the Note between the Tiles, and covered them as quick as I could with the light Mould, quite unperceived; and the Maid sinding the Hussy, I took it, and sauntered in again, and met Mrs. Jewkes coming to see after me. What I wrote was this:

· Reverend Sir,

HE want of an Opportunity to speak my Mind to you, I am sure will excuse this Boldness in a poor Creature that is betrayed hither, I

have Reason to think, for the worst of Purposes.

You know fomething, to be fure, of my Story, my native Poverty, which I am not ashamed of, my

' late Lady's Goodness, and my Master's Designs upon me. 'Tis true he promises Honour, and all

that; but the Honour of the Wicked is Difgrace

and Shame to the Virtuous: And he may think · he keeps his promises according to the Notions he may allow himself to hold; and yet, according to · mine, and every good Body's, basely ruin me. I am fo wretched, and ill-treated by this Mrs. · Yewkes, and she is so ill-principled a Woman, that as I may foon want the Opportunity which the happy Hint of this Day affords to my Hopes. I throw myself at once upon your Goodness, without the least Reserve; for I cannot be worse than I am, should that fail me; which, I dare fay, to your Power, it will not: For I fee it, Sir, in vour Looks, I hope it from your Cloth, and I doubt it not from your Inclination, in a Case circumstanced as my unhappy one is. For, Sir, in helping me out of my present Distress, you perform all the Acts of Religion in one; and the highest Mercy and Charity, both to Body and · Soul of a poor Wretch, that, believe me, Sir, has, e at present, not so much as in Thought swerv'd

from her Innocence.
Is there not some way to be found out for my
Escape, without Danger to yourself? Is there no
Gentleman or Lady of Virtue in this Neighbourhood, to whom I may fly, only till I can find a
way to get to my poor Father and Mother? Cannot Lady Davers be made acquainted with my sad
Story, by your conveying a Letter to her? My

opoor Parents are so low in the World, they can do nothing but break their Hearts for me; and that,

I fear, will be the End of it.

My Master promises, if I will be easy, as he calls it, in my present Lot, he will not come down without my Consent. Alas! Sir, this is nothing:
For what's the Promise of a Person who thinks himself at liberty to act as he has done by me?
If he comes, it must be to ruin me; and come

all of top of the transport of the

to be fure he will, when he thinks he has filenced the Clamours of my Friends, and lulled me, as no

doubt he hopes, into a fatal Security.

Now, therefore, Sir, is all the time I have to work and struggle for the Preservation of my Honesty. If I stay till he comes, I am undone. You have a Key to the back Garden-door; I have great Hopes from that. Study, good Sir, and contrive for me. I will faithfully keep your Sectet.—Yet I should be loth to have you suffer for me!

'I fay no more, but commit this to the happy Tiles, in the Bosom of that Earth, where, I hope, my Deliverance will take Root, and bring forth such Fruit, as may turn to my inexpressible Joy, and your eternal Reward, both here and hereafter: As shall ever pray,

· Your oppressed humble Servant?

THURSDAY.

HIS completes a terrible Week fince my fetting out, as I hoped to fee you, my dear Father and Mother. O how different were my Hopes then, from what they are now! Yet who knows what these happy Tiles may produce!

But I must tell you, first, how I have been beaten, by Mrs. Fewkes! 'Tis very true!—And thus it

came about :

My Impatience was great to walk in the Garden, to see if any-thing had offered, answerable to my Hopes. But this wicked Mrs. Jewkes would not let me go without her; and said, she was not at Leisure. We had a great many Words about it; for I told her, It was very hard I could not be trusted to walk by myself in the Garden for a little Air; but must be dogg'd and watch'd worse than a Thief.

She

She still pleaded her Instructions, and said she was not to trust me out of her Sight: And you had better, said she, be easy and contented, I assure you; for I have worse Orders than you have yet found. I remember, added she, your asking Mr. Williams, If there were any Gentry in the Neighbourhood? This makes me suspect you want to get away to them, to tell your sad dismal Story, as you call it.

My Heart was at my Mouth; for I feared by that Hint, she had seen my Letter under the Tiles: Q how uneasy I was! At last she said, Well, since you take on so, you may take a Turn, and I will

be with you in a Minute.

When I was out of Sight of her Window, I speeded towards the hopeful Place; but was soon forced to slacken my Pace, by her odious Voice; Hey-day, why so nimble, and whither so fast? said she: What! are you upon a Wager? I stopt for her, till her pursy Sides were waddled up to me; and she held by my Arm, half out of Breath: So I was forced to pass by the dear Place, without daring to look at it.

The Gardener was at work a little farther, and fo we looked upon him, and I began to talk about his Art; but she faid, Softly, my Instructions are, not to let you be so familiar with the Servants. Why, said I, are you asraid I should consederate with them to commit a Robbery upon my Master? May-be I am, said the odious Wretch; for to rob him of yourself, would be the worst that could hap-

pen to him, in his Opinion.

And pray, faid I, walking on, how came I to be his Property? What Right has he in me, but such as a Thief may plead to stolen goods?—Why, was ever the like heard?—says she.—This is downright Rebellion, I protest!—Well, well, Lambkin (which the Foolish often calls me), if I was in his Place, he should

should not have his Property in you long questionable. Why, what would you do, said I, if you were he?—Not stand shill-I-shall-I, as he does? but put you and himself both out of your Pain.—Why, Jezebel, said I (I could not help it), would you ruin me by Force?—Upon this she gave me a deadly Slap upon my Shoulder: Take that, said

the; whom do you call Fezebel?

I was so surprized (for you never beat me, my dear Father and Mother, in your Lives), that I was like one thunder-struck; and look'd round, as if I wanted somebody to help me; but, alas! I had nobody; and said, at last, rubbing my Shoulder, Is this also in your Instructions?—Alas! for me! am I to be beaten too? And so fell a-crying, and threw myself upon the Grass-walk we were upon.—Said she, in a great Pet, I won't be called such Names, I'll assure you. Marry come up! I see you have a Spirit: You must and shall be kept under. I'll manage such little provoking Things as you, I warrant ye! Come, come, we'll go in a'doors, and I'll lock you up, and you shall have no Shoes, nor any-thing else, if this be the Case.

I did not know what to do. This was a cruel Thing to me, and I blam'd myself for my free Speech; for now I had given her some Pretence; and Oh! thought I, here I have by my Malepertness, ruined

the only Project I had left.

The Gardener faw this Scene; but she called to him, Well, Jacob, what do you stare at? Pray mind what you're upon. And away he walked, to an-

other Quarter, out of Sight.

Well, thought I, I must put on the Dissembler a little, I see She took my Hand roughly; Come, get up, said she, and come in a'doors.—I'll Jezehel you, I will so!—Why, dear Mrs. Jewkes, said I—None of your Dears, and your coaxing! said she:

164 PAMELA; Or,

the; why not Jezebel again?—She was in a fearful Paffion, I faw, and I was out of my Wits. Thought I, I have often heard Women blamed for their Tongues; I wish mine had been shorter. But I can't go in, said I? indeed I can't!—Why, said she, can't you? I'll warrant I can take such a thin Body as you are under my Arm, and carry you in, if you won't walk. You don't know my Strength,—Yes, but I do, said I, too well; and will you not use me worse, when I come in?—So I arose, and she muttered to herself all the Way, She to be a Jezebel with me, that had used her so well! and such like.

When I came near the House, I said, sitting down u on a Settle-bench: Well, I will not go in, till you sa, you forgive me, Mrs. Jewkes.—If you will forgive my calling you that Name, I will forgive your beating me.—She sat down by me, and seem'd in a great Pucker, and said, Well, come, I will so give you for this Time; and so kissed me, as a Mark of Reconciliation.—But pray, said I, tell me where I am to walk, and go, and give me what I iberty you can; and when I know the most you can savour me with, you shall see I will be as content

as I can, and not ask you for more.

Ay, faid she, this is something like: I wish I could give you all the Liberty you desire; for you must think it is no Pleasure to me to tie you to my Petticoat, as it were, and not let you stir without me.

But People that will do their Duties, must have some Trouble; and what I do, is to serve as good a Master, to be sure, as lives—Yes, said I, to everybody but me! He loves you too well, to be sure, return'd she; and that's the Reason; so you ought to bear it. I say, love! reply'd I. Come, said she, don't let the Wench see you have been crying, nor tell her any Tales; for you won't tell them fairly, I

am fure; and I'll fend her, and you shall take another Walk in the Garden, if you will: Maybe, it will get you a Stomach to your Dinner; for you don't eat enough to keep Life and Soul together. You are Beauty to the Bone, added the strange Wretch, or you could not look so well as you do, with so little Stomach, so little Rest, and so much pining and whining for nothing at all. Well, thought I, say what thou wilt, so I can be rid of thy bad Tongue and Company: And I hope to find some Opportunity now, to come at my Sunslower. But I walked the other way, to take that in my Return,

to avoid Suspicion.

I forced my Discourse to the Maid; but it was all upon general things; for I find she is asked after every thing I fay and do. When I came near the Place, as I had been deviling, I faid, Pray step to the Gardener, and ask him to gather a Sallad for me to Dinner. She called out, Jacob! Said I, He can't hear you fo far off; and pray tell him, I should like a Cucumber too, if he has one. When she had stept about a Bow-shot from me, I popt down, and whipt my Fingers under the upper Tile, and pulled out a Letter without Direction, and thrust it in my Bosom, trembling for Joy. She was with me, before I could well fecure it; and I was in such a taking, that I feared I should difcover myself. You seem frighted, Madam, said she. Why, faid I, with a lucky Thought (alas! your poor Daughter will make an Intriguer by-and-by; but I hope an innocent one!), I stoop'd to smell at the Sunflower, and a great nafty Worm ran into the Ground, that startled me; for I can't abide Worms. Said she, Sunflowers don't smell. So I find, reply'd I. And then we walked in; and Mrs. Fewkes faid: Well, you have made hafte now .- You shall go another time. I went I went up to my Closet, lock'd myself in, and, opening my Letter, found in it these Words:

I Am infinitely concerned for your Distress. I most heartily wish it may be in my Power to serve and save so much Innocence, Beauty, and Merit. My whole Dependence is upon Mr. B. and I have a near View of being provided for by his Favour to me. But yet I would sooner forseit all my Hopes in him (trusting in God for the rest) than not assist you, if possible. I never look'd upon Mr. B. in the Light he now appears in to me, in your Case. To be sure he is no professed Debauchee. But I am intirely of Opinion, you should, if possible, get out of his Hands, and especially as you are in very bad ones in Mrs. * Jewkes's.

We have here the Widow Lady Jones, Mistress of a good Fortune, and a Woman of Virtue, I be-

· lieve. We have also old Sir Simon Darnford, and · his Lady, who is a good Woman; and they have

two Daughters, virtuous young Ladies. All the

rest are but middling People, and Traders, at best. I will try, if you please, either Lady Jones, or

Lady Darnford, if they'll permit you to take Re-

fuge with them. I fee no probability of keeping myself concealed in this Matter; but will, as I

· faid, risque all things to serve you; for I never saw

· a Sweetness and Innocence like yours; and your

hard Case has attached me intirely to you; for I

know, as you so happily express, if I can serve you in this Case, I shall thereby perform all the

· Acts of Religion in one.

As to Lady Davers, I will convey a Letter, if you please, to her; but it must not be from our

· Post-house, I give you Caution; for the Man owes all his Bread to Mr. B. and his Place too;

e and

and I believe, by fomething that dropt from him, over a Can of Ale, has his Instructions. You

don't know how you are furrounded; all which

confirms me in your Opinion, that no Honour is meant you, let what will be professed; and I

am glad you want no Caution on that Head

Give me Leave to fay, that I had heard much in your Praise, but, I think, greatly short of what you deserve, both as to Person and Mind: My Eyes convince me of the one, your Letter of the other. For fear of losing the present lucky Opportunity, I am longer than otherwise I should be. But I will not enlarge, any further than to affure you that I am, to the best of my Power,

. Your faithful Friend and Servant,

' ARTHUR WILLIAMS.

'I will come once every Morning, and once every Evening, after School-time, to look

for your Letters. I'll come in, and return

without going into the House, if I see the

· Coast clear: Otherwise, to avoid Suspicion,

'I'll come in.'

I instantly, in answer to this pleasing Letter, wrote as follows:

Reverend Sir,

How suited to your Function, and your Character, is your kind Letter! God bless you for it! I now think I am beginning to be happy.

I should be forry to have you suffer on my account: but I hope it will be made up to you an

hundred-fold, by that God whom you fo faithful-

' ly serve. I should be too happy, could I ever have it in my Power to contribute in the least to

it. But, alas! to serve me, must be for God's

' fake only; for I am poor and lowly in Fortune;

' though in Mind, I hope, too high to do a mean

or unworthy Deed to gain a Kingdom. But I lose

· Time .-

Any way you think best, I shall be pleased with; for I know not the Persons, nor in what

manner it is best to apply to them. I am glad of

the Hint you so kindly give me of the Man at the Post-house. I was thinking of opening a way

for myself by Letter, when I could have Oppor-

' tunity; but I fee more and more that I am indeed

frangely furrounded with Dangers; and that there

' is no Dependence to be made on my Master's Ho-

o nour.

'I should think, Sir, if either of those Ladies would give Leave, I might some way get out by Favour of your Key; and as it is impossible,

watched as I am, to know when it can be, sup-

opofe, Sir, you could get one made by it, and put

it, the next Opportunity, under the Sunflower?

-I am sure no Time is to be lost, because it is

rather my Wonder, that she is not thoughtful

about this Key, than otherwise; for she forgets

onot the minutest thing. But, Sir, if I had this

Key, I could, if these Ladies would not shelter

me, run away any-where: And if I was once

out of the House, they could have no Pretence

to force me in again; for I have done no Harm,

and hope to make my Story good to any compaf-

fionate Body; and by this way you not to be

known. Torture should not wring it from me,

· I affure you.

One thing more, good Sir. Have you no Correfpondence with my Master's Bedfordshire Family?

By that means, may-be, I could be informed of his

Intention of coming hither, and when. I inclose you a Letter of a Deceitful Wretch; for I can

c truft

- trust you with any-thing, poor John Arnold. Its Contents will tell why I inclose it. Perhaps, by
- his Means, fomething may be discover'd; for he
- feems willing to atone for his Treachery to me, by the Intimation of future Service. I leave the
- Hint to you to improve upon, and am, Reverend

' Your for ever obliged,

" And thankful Servant.

- I hope, Sir, by your Favour, I could fend a
 - ' little Packet, now-and-then, some-how, to
 - 'my poor Father and Mother. I have a little
 - · Stock of Money, about five or fix Guineas:
 - ' Shall I put half in your Hands, to defray the
 - * Charge of a Man and Horse, or any other

· Incidents?

I had but just Time to transcribe this, before I was called to Dinner; and I put that for Mr. Williams, with a Wafer in it, in my Bosom, to get an Op-

portuity to lay it in the dear Place.

O good Sirs, of all the Flowers in the Garden, the Sunflower, fure, is the loveliest!—It is a propitious one to me! How nobly my Plot succeeds! But I begin to be afraid my Writings may be discovered; for they grow large: I stitch them hitherto in my Under-coat, next my Linen. But if this Brute should search me!—I must try to please her, and then she won't.

Well, I am but just come off from a Walkin the Garden, and have deposited my Letter by a simple Wile. I got some Horse-beans; and we took a Turn in the Garden, to angle, as Mrs. Jewkes had promised me. She baited the Hook, and I sheld it, and soon hooked a lovely Carp. Play it, Vel. I.

play it, faid she: I did, and brought it to the Bank. A tad Thought just then came into my Head; and I took it, and threw it in again; and O the Pleafure it feam'd to have, to flounce in, when at Liberty !- Why this? fays she. O Mrs. Fewkes! faid, I was thinking this poor Carp was the unhappy Pamela. I was likening you and myself to my naughty Master. As we hooked and deceived the poor Carp, so was I betrayed by false Baits; and when you faid, Play it, play it, it went to my Heart, to think I should sport with the Destruction of the poor Fish I had betray'd; and I could not but fling it in again: And did you not fee the Joy with which the happy Carp flounced from us? O! faid I, may some good merciful Body procure me my Liberty in the fame Manner; for, to be fure, I think my Danger equal!

Lord bless thee! said she, what a Thought is there!—Well, I can angle no more, added 1. I'll try my Fortune, said she, and took the Rod. Do, answer'd I; and I will plant Life, if I can, while you are destroying it. I have some Horse-beans here, and will go and stick them into one of the Borders, to see how long they will be coming up; and I will

call them my Garden.

So you see, dear Father and Mother (I hope now you will soon see; for, may-be, if I can't get away so soon myself, I may send my Papers some-how; I say, you will see), that this surnishes me with a good Excuse to look after my Garden another time; and if the Mould should look a little freshish, it won't be so much suspected. She mistrusted nothing of this; and I went and stuck in here-and-there my Beans, for about the Length of sive Ells, of each Side of the Sunslower; and easily deposited my Letter. And not a little proud am I of this Contrivance. Sure something will do at last!

FRIDAY,

FRIDAY, SATURDAY,

HAVE just now told you a Trick of mine; now I'll tell you a Trick of this wicked Woman's. She comes up to me; fays she, I have a Bill Icannot change till to-morrow; and a Tradefman wants his Money most fadly; and I don't love to turn poor Trades-folks away without their Money: Have you any about you? I have a little, reply'd I: How much will do? Oh! faid she, I want eight Pounds. Alack! faid I, I have but between five and fix. Lend me that, faid she, till to-morrow. I did so; and she went down Stairs: And when fhe came up, fhe laughed, and faid, Well I have paid the Tradesman. Said I, I hope you'll give it me again to-morrow. At that, the Assurance, laughing loud, faid, Why, what Occasion have you for Money? To tell you the Truth, Lambkin, I didn't want it. I only feared you might make a bad Use of it; and now I can trust Nan with you a little oftner, especially as I have got the Key of your Portmanteau; fo that you can neither corrupt her with Money, nor fine Things. Never did anybody look more filly than I .- O how I fretted, to be so foolishly outwitted !- And the more, as I had hinted to Mr. Williams, that I would put fome in his Hands to defray the Charges of my fending to you. I cry'd for Vexation. - And now I have not five Shillings left to support me, if I can get away. -Was ever fuch a Fool as I! I must be priding myself in my Contrivances, indeed! Said I, Was this in your Instructions, Wolfkin? (for she called me Lambkin). Jezebel, you mean, Child! faid she,-Well, I now forgive you heartily; let's bus and be Friends.—Out upon you! faid I; I cannot bear you. - But I durst not call her Names again; for I dread her huge Paw most fadly. The more I think of this Thing, the more do I regret it, and blame myself. ~

This Night the Man from the Post-house brought a Letter for Mrs. Jewkes, in which was one inclosed to me: She brought it me up. Said she, Well, my good Master don't forget us. He has fent you a Letter; and see what he writes to me. So she read, That he hoped her fair Charge was well, happy and contented: Ay, to be fure, faid I, I can't choose!—That he did not doubt her Care and Kindness to me; that I was very dear to him, and she could not use me too well? and the like. There's a Master for you! faid she: Sure you will love and pray for him. I defired her to read the rest. No, no, faid she, but I won't. Said I, Are there any Orders for taking my Shoes away, and for beating me! No, faid she, nor about Fezebel neither. Well, return'd I, I cry Truce; for I have no Mind to be beat again. I thought, faid she, we had forgiven one another.

My Letter is as follows:

· My dear PAMELA,

I Begin to repent already, that I have bound myfelf, by Promise, not to see you till you give me Leave; for I think the Time very tedious. Can you place so much Confidence in me, as to invite me down? Affure yourself, that your Generofity shall not be thrown away upon me. I the rather would press this, as I am uneasy for your "Uneafiness; for Mrs. Jewkes acquaints me, that vou take your Restraint very heavily; and neither eat, drink, nor rest well; and I have too e great an Interest in your Health, not to wish to 5 Morten the Time of this Trial; which will be the

the Consequence of my coming down to you. Gohn, too, has intimated to me your Concern, with a Grief that hardly gave him leave for Utterance, a Grief that a little alarmed my Tenderness for you. Not that I fear any-thing, but that your Difregard to me, which yet my proud Heart will hardly e permit me to own, may throw you upon some Rashness, that might encourage a daring Hope: But how poorly do I descend, to be anxious ' about fuch a Menial as he !—I will only fay one 'Thing, that if you will give me Leave to attend ' you at the Hall (consider who it is that requests this from you as a Favour), I folemnly declare, that you shall have Cause to be pleased with this obliging Mark of your Confidence in me, and · Consideration for me; and if I find Mrs. Jewkes has not behav'd to you with the Respect due to one I so dearly love, I will put it intirely into vour Power to discharge her the House, if you think proper; and Mrs. Fervis, or who else you please, shall attend you in her Place. This I say on a Hint John gave me, as if you refented something from that Quarter. Dearest Pamela, answer favourably this earnest Request of one that cannot live without you, and on whose Honour to you, ' you may absolutely depend; and so much the more, as you place a Confidence in it. I am, and af-' furedly ever will be,

' Your Faithful and Affectionate, &c.

You will be glad, I know, to hear your Father and Mother are well, and easy upon your last Letter. That gave me a Pleasure that I am resolv'd you shall not repent. Mrs. Jewkes will convey to me your Answer.

174 PAMELA; Or,

I but flightly read this Letter for the present, to give way to one I had hopes of finding by this time from Mr. Williams. I took an Evening Turn, as I call'd it, in Mrs. Jewkes's Company; and walking by the Place, I faid, Do you think, Mrs. Fewkes, any of my Beans can have struck since Yesterday? She laughed, and faid, you are a poor Gardener; but I love to fee you divert your-felf. She paffing on, I found my good Friend had provided for me; and, flipping it in my Bosom (for her Back was towards me), Here, faid I, (having a Bean in my Hand, is one of them; but it has not stirr'd. No, to be fure, faid she, and turn'd upon me a most wicked Jest, unbecoming the Mouth of a Woman, about Planting, &c. When I came in, I hy'd to my Closet, and read as follows:

AM forry to tell you, that I have had a Repulse from Lady Jones. She' is concerned at your · Case, she says; but don't care to make herself ' Enemies. I apply'd to Lady Darnford, and told her, in the most pathetic Manner I could, your fad Story, and shew'd her your more pathetic Letter, I found her well dispos'd; but she would advise with Sir Simon, who, by-the-bye, is not a · Man of an extraordinary Character for Virtue; · but he faid to his Lady, in my Presence, Why, what is all this, my Dear, but that our Neighbour has a Mind to his Mother's Waiting-maid! And · if he takes care she wants for nothing, I don't see any great Injury will be done her. He hurts no · Family by this' (So, my dear Father and Mother, it seems that poor People's Honesty is to go for nothing): And I think, Mr. Williams, you of all . Men, should not engage in this Affair, against ' your Friend and Patron. He spoke this in so de-· termin'd a Manner, that the Lady had done; and 6 I had I had only to beg no Notice should be taken of

the Matter as from me.

I have hinted your Case to Mr. Peters, the Minister of this Parish; but I am concerned to say, that he imputed felfish Views to me, as if I would make an Interest in your Affections by my Zeal. And when I represented the Duties of our Function, and the like, and protested my Disinterestedness, he coldly said, I was very good; but was a young Man, and knew little of the World. And tho' it was a Thing to be lamented, yet when he and I should set about to reform Mankind in this respect, we would have enough upon our Hands: for he faid, it was too common and fashionable a · Case to be withstood by a private Clergyman or two: And then he utter'd some Reslections upon

the Conduct of the prefent Fathers of the Church. in regard to the first Personages of the Realm, as

a Justification of his Coldness on this Score.

I represented the different Circumstances of your Affair; that other women liv'd evilly by their own Consent; but to serve you, was to save an Innocence that had but few Examples; and then

'I shew'd him your Letter.

'He faid, it was prettily written; and he was forry for you; and that your good Intentions ought to be encouraged: But what, faid he, would you have me do, Mr. Williams? Why, suppose, ' Sir, said I, you give her Shelter in your House with your Spouse and Niece, till she can get to her Friends.—What, and embroil myself with a Man of Mr. B.'s Power and Fortune! No, not I, 'I'll affure you !-And I would have you confider what you are about. Besides, she owns, continu'd he, that he promifes to do honourably by her; and her Shyness will procure her good Terms enough; for he is no covetous nor wicked Gen-14

tleman, except in this Case; and 'tis what all

voung Gentlemen will do.

I am greatly concern'd for him, I affure you : · but am not discourag'd by this ill Success, let what

will come of it, if I can ferve you.

· I don't hear, as yet, that Mr. B. is coming. I am glad of your Hint as to that unhappy Fellow John Arnold. Something, perhaps, will strike out from that, which may be useful. As to your · Packets, if you feal them up, and lay them in the · usual Place, if you find it not suspected, I will watch an Opportunity to convey them; but if they are large, you had best be very cautious. · This evil Woman, I find, mistrusts me much. I just hear, that the Gentleman is dying, whose

Living Mr. B. promised me. I have almost a · Scruple to take it, as I am acting fo contrary to his Defires, but I hope he'll one Day thank me

As to Money, dont't think of it at prefent, · for it.

· Be affured you may command all in my Power

to do for you without Reserve.

I believe, when we hear he is coming, it will · be best to make use of the Key, which I shall · foon procure you; and I can borrow a Horse for vou, I believe, to wait within half a Mile of the · Back door, over the Pasture; and will contrive by myself, or somebody, to have you conducted

fome Miles distant, to one of the Villages there-

abouts; so don't be discomforted, I beseech you,

I am, excellent Mrs. Pamela,

. Your faithful Friend, &c.'

I made a thousand sad Reslections upon the former Part of this honest Gentleman's kind Letter; and but for the Hope he gave me at last, should have given up my Case as quite desperate. I then wrote to thank him most gratefully for his kind Endeayours; to lament the little Concern the Gentry had for my deplorable Case; the Wickedness of the World, first to give way to such iniquitous Fashions, and then plead the Frequency of them, against the Attempt to amend them; and how unaffected People were with the Diffresses of others. I recall'd my former Hint as to writing to Lady Davers, which I fear'd, I faid, would only ferve to apprife her Brother, that she knew his wicked Scheme, and more harden him in it, and make him come down the fooner, and to be the more determin'd on my Ruin; besides that, it might make Mr. Williams guess'd at, as a Means of conveying my Letter: And being very fearful, that if that good Lady would interest herself in my Behalf (which was a Doubt, because she both lov'd and fear'd her Brother), it would have no Effect upon him; and that therefore I would wait the happy Event I might hope for from his kind Affistance in the Key, and the Horse. 1 intimated my Master's Letter, begging to be permitted to come down: Was fearful it might be sudden; and that I was of Opinion no Time was to be loft; for we might let flip all our Opportunities; telling him the Money-trick of this vile Woman, &c.

I had not Time to take a Copy of this Letter, I was fo watched. But when I had it ready in my Bosom, I was easy. And so I went to seek out Mrs. Tewkes, and told her I would have her Advice upon the Letter I had received from my Master; which Point of Confidence in her pleas'd her not a little. Ay, faid she, now this is something like: And we'll take a Turn in the Garden, or where you please. I pretended it was indifferent to me; and so we walk'd into the Garden. I began to talk to her of the Letter; but was far from acquainting her with all the Contents; only that he wanted my Confent to come down, and hop'd she us'd me kindly, and the like. And I said, Now, Mrs. Jewkes, let me have your Advice as to this. Why then, said she, I will give it you freely: E'en send to him to come down. It will highly oblige him, and I dare say you'll fare the better for it. How the better? said I.—I dare say, you think yourself, that he intends my Ruin. I hate, said she, that soolish Word, your Ruin!—Why ne'er a Lady in the Land may live happier than you, if you will, or be more honourably used.

Well, Mrs. Jewkes, said I, I shall not, at this Time, dispute with you about the Words Ruin and honourable: for I find, we have quite different Notions of both: But now I will speak plainer than ever I did. Do you think he intends to make Proposals to me as to a kept Mistress, or kept Slave rather, or do you not?—Why, Lambkin, said she, what dost thou think, thyself?—I fear, said I, he does. Well, said she, but if he does (for I know nothing of the Matter, I assure you), you may have your own Terms—I see that; for you may do any-thing with him.

I could not bear this to be spoken, the it was all I sear'd of a long time; and began to exclaim most sadly. Nay, said she, he may marry you, as far as I know.—No, no, said I, that cannot be.—I neither desire nor expect it. His Condition don't permit me to have such a Thought; and that, and the whole Series of his Conduct, convinces me of the contrary; and you would have me invite him to come down, would you? Is not this to invite my Ruin?

'Tis what I would do, faid she, in your Place; and if it was to be as you think, I should rather be out of my Pain, than live in continual Frights and Apprehensions, as you do. No, reply'd I, an Hour of Innocence

Then

Innocence is worth an Age of Guilt; and were my Life to be made ever so miserable by it, I should never forgive myself, if I were not to lengthen out to the longest Minute my happy Time of Honesty. Who knows what Providence may do for me!

Why, may-be, faid she, as he loves you so well, you may prevail upon him by your Prayers and Tears; and for that Reason, I should think, you'd better let him come down. Well, said I, I will write him a Letter, because he expects an Answer, or may-be he will make a Pretence to come down. How can it go?

I'll take care of that, said she; it is in my Instructions.—Ay, thought I, so I doubt, by the Hint

Mr. Williams gave me about the Post-house.

The Gardener coming by, I faid, Mr. Facob, I have planted a few Beans, and I call the Place my Garden. It is just by the Door out yonder: I'll shew it you; pray don't dig them up. So I went on with him; and when he had turn'd the Alley, out of her Sight, and were near the Place, faid I, Pray step to Mrs. Tewkes, and alk her if the has any more Beans for me to plant? He smil'd, I suppose, at my Foolishness; and I popp'd the Letter under the Mould, and stepp'd back, as if waiting for his Return; which, being near, was immediate; and the followed him. What should I do with Beans? faid she-and fadly scared me; for she whisper'd me, I am afraid of some Fetch! You don't use to fend on fuch fimple Errands.—What Fetch? faid I; it is hard I can neither ffir, nor speak, but I must be suspected. - Why, faid she, my Master writes, that I must have all my Eyes about me; for tho' you are as innocent as a Dove, yet you're as cunning as a Serpent. But I'll forgive you, if you cheat me.

Then I thought of my Money, and could have call'd her Names, had I dar'd: And I faid, Pray Mrs. Fewkes, now you talk of forgiving me, if I cheat you, be fo kind as to pay me my Money; for though I have no occasion for it, yet I know you was but in jest, and intended to give it me again. You shall have it in a proper Time, said she; but, indeed, I was in earnest to get it out of your Hands, for fear you should make an ill Use of it. And so we cavilled upon this Subject as we walk'd in, and I went up to write my Letter to my Master; and, as I intended to shew it her, I resolved to write accordingly as to her Part of it; for I made little Account of his Offer to Mrs. Fervis to me, instead of this wicked Woman (though the most agreeable Thing that could have befallen me, except my Escape from hence) nor indeed any-thing he said. For to be honourable, in the just Sense of the Word, he need not have caus'd me to be run away with, and confined as I am. I wrote as follows:

· Honour'd Sir,

WHEN I confider how eafily you might make me happy, fince all I defire is to be per-

mitted to go to my poor Father and Mother; when

I reflect upon your former Proposal to me, in relation to a certain Person, not one Word of

which is now mentioned; and upon my being

in that strange Manner run away with, and still

kept here a miserable Prisoner; do you think,

Sir, (pardon your poor Servant's Freedom; my

Fears make me bold; do you think, I fay) that your general Assurances of Honour to me,

can have the Effect upon me, that, were it not for

these Things, all your Words ought to have?

· -O good Sir! I too much apprehend, that your

· Notions of Honour and mine are very different

from 6

from one another: And I have no other Hope but in your continued Absence. If you have any Pro-

posals to make me, that are consistent with your honourable Professions, in my humble Sense of the

Word, a few Lines will communicate them to me, and I will return such an Answer as befits me. But

Oh! What Proposals can one in your high Station

have to make to one in my low one! I know what belongs to your Degree too well, to imagine, that

any-thing can be expected but fad Temptations,

and utter Distress, if you come down; and you

know not, Sir, when I am made desperate, what

the wretched Pamela dares to do!

Whatever Rashness you may impute to me, I cannot help it; but I wish I may not be forced upon any, that otherwise would never enter into my 'Thoughts. Forgive me, Sir, my Plainness; I I should be loth to behave to my Master unbecomingly; but I must needs say, Sir, my Innocence is fo dear to me, that all other Confiderations are, and, I hope, shall ever be, treated by me as Niceties, that ought, for that, to be dispensed with. If you mean honourably, why, Sir, should you not let me know it plainly? Why is it neceffary to imprison me, to convince me of it? And why must I be close watched, and attended, hindered from flirring out, from speaking to anybody, from going fo much as to Church to pray for you, who have been, till of late, so generous a Benefactor to me? Why, Sir, I humbly ask, why 'all this, if you mean honourably?—It is not for ' me to expostulate so freely, but in a Case so near to me, with you, Sir, fo greatly my Superior. ' Pardon me, I hope you will; but as to any the · least Desire of seeing you, I cannot bear the dreadful Apprehension. Whatever you have to propose, whatever you intend by me, let my Affent be that

182 PAMELA; Or,

of a free Person, mean as I am, and not of a

· fordid Slave, who is to be threatened and fright-

ened into a Compliance, that your Conduct to her

· feems to imply would be otherwise abhorred by

her.-My Restraint is indeed hard upon me: 1

am very uneafy under it. Shorten it, I beseech you.

or-But I will not dare to fay more, than that I

am

'Your greatly oppressed unhappy Servant.'

After I had taken a Copy of this, I folded it up; and Mrs. Fewkes, coming, just as I had done, sat down by me; and faid, when she saw me direct it, I wish you would tell me if you have taken my Advice, and confented to my Master's coming down. If it will oblige you, faid I, I will read it to you. That's good, faid fhe; then I'll love you dearly.-Said I, Then you must not offer to alter one Word. I won't, reply'd fhe. So I read it to her, and she praised me much for my wording it; but faid, she thought I pushed the Matter very close; and it would better bear talking of, than writing about. She wanted an Explanation or two, as about the Proposal to a certain Person; but I said, she must take it as she heard it. Well, well, said she, I make no doubt you understand one another; and will do fo more and more. I fealed up the Letter, and she undertook to convey it.

SUNDAY.

FOR my Part, I knew it in vain to expect to have Leave to go to Church now, and fo I did not ask; and I was the more indifferent, because, if I might have had Permission, the Sight of the neighbouring Gentry, who had despised my Sufferings, would have given me great Regret and Sorrow;

and

and it was impossible I should have edified under any Doctrine preached by Mr. Peters: So I applied my-

felf to my private Devotions.

Mr. Williams came Yesterday, and this Day, as usual, and took my Letter; but, having no good Opportunity, we avoided one another's Converfation, and kept at a Distance: But I was concerned I had not the Key; for I would not have loft a Moment in that Case, had I been he, and he I. When I was at my Devotion, Mrs. Fewkes came up, and wanted me fadly to fing her a Pfalm, as the had often on common Days importuned me for a Song upon the Spinnet: But I declined it, because my Spirits were fo low I could hardly speak, nor cared to be spoken to; but when she was gone, I, remembring the exxxviith Pfalm to be a little touching, turned to it, and took the Liberty to alter it, somewhat nearer to my Case. I hope I did not sin in it; but thus I turned it.

I.

WHEN sad I sat in B—n-hall,
All guarded round about,
And thought of every absent Friend,
The Tears for Grief burst out.

H.

My Joys and Hopes all overthrown, My Heart-strings almost broke, Unfit my Mind for Melody, Much more to bear a Joke;

III.

Then she to whom I Pris'ner was, Said to me tauntingly Now chear your Heart, and sing a Song, And tune your Mind to Joy.

IV.

Alas! Said I, how can I frame
My heavy Heart to sing,
Or tune my Mind, while thus enthrall'd
By such a wicked Thing!

V.

But yet, if from my Innocence I, ev'n in Thought, should slide, Then let my Fingers quite forget The sweet Spinnet to guide.

VI.

And let my Tongue within my Mouth
Be lock'd for ever fast,
If I rejoice, before I see
My full Deliv'rance past.

VII.

And thou, Almighty, recompense
The Evils I endure
From those who seek my sad Disgrace,
So causeless, to procure.

VIII.

Remember, Lord, this Mrs. Jewkes, When, with a mighty Sound, She cries, Down with her Chastity, Down to the very Ground!

IX.

Ev'n so shalt thou, O wicked One, At length to Shame be brought; And happy shall all those be call'd That my Deliv'rance wrought. X.

Yea, bleffed shall the Man be call'd
That shames thee of thy Evil,
And saves me from thy vile Attempts,
And thee, too, from the D——l.

MONDAY, TUESDAY, WEDNESDAY.

Write now with a little more liking, tho' less Opportunity, because Mr. Williams has got a I rge Parcel of my Papers safe, in his Hands, to send them to you, as he has Opportunity; so I am not quite uselessly employed; and I am delivered, besides, from the Fear of their being sound, if I should be searched, or discovered, I have been permitted to take an Airing five or six Miles, with thirs. Jewies: But, tho' I know not the Reason, she watches me more closely than ever; so that we have discontinued, by Consent, for these three Days, the Sunswer Correspondence.

The poor Cook-maid has had a bad Mischance; for she has been hurt much by a Bull in the Pasture, by the Side of the Garden, not far from the Backdoor. Now this Pasture I am to cross, which is about half a Mile, and then is a Common, and near that a private Horse-road, where I hope to find an Opporsunity for escaping, as soon as Mr. Williams can get me a Horse, and has made all ready for me: For he has got me the Key, which he put under the Mould, just by the Door, as he found an Oppor-

tunity to hint to me.

He just now has signified, that the Gentleman is dead, whose Living he has had Hope of; and he came pretendedly to tell Mrs. Jewkes of it; and so could speak this to her before me. She wished him Joy. See what the World is! one Man's Death is another

how heavily you apprehend Dishonour from my

Master, that I think it is Pity you should not have Mr. Williams.

I knew this must be a Fetch of hers, because, instead of being troubled for me, as she pretended, she watched me closer, and him too: And so I said, There is not the Man living that I defire to marry. If I can but keep myself honest, it is all my Defire: And to be a Comfort and Assistance to my poor Parents, if it should be my happy Lot to be so, is the very Top of my Ambition. Well, but, said she, I have been thinking very seriously, that Mr. Williams would make you a good Husband; and as he will owe all his Fortune to my Master, he will be very glad, to be sure, to be obliged to him for a Wife of his choosing; especially, said she, such a pretty one, and one so ingenious, and genteelly educated.

This gave me a Doubt, whether she knew of my Master's Intimation of that Sort formerly; and I asked her, if she had Reason to surmise, that that was in View? No, she said; it was only her own Thought; but it was very likely, that my Master had either that in View, or something better for me. But, if I approved of it, she would propose such a Thing to her Master directly; and gave a detestable Hint, that I might take Resolutions upon it, of bringing

bringing such an Affair to Effect. I told her I abhorr'd her vile Infinuation; and as to Mr. Williams, I thought him a civil good fort of Man; but as on one side, he was above me; so on the other, I said of all things, I did not love a Parson. So, sinding she could make nothing of me, she quitted the Subject.

I will open this Letter by-and-by, and give you the Contents of it; for the is up and down to much,

that I am afraid of her furprifing me.

Well, I see Providence has not abandon'd me: I shall be under no necessity to make advances to Mr. Williams, if I was (as I am sure I am not) dispos'd to it. This is his Letter:

Know not how to express myself, lest I should I appear to you to have a felfish View in the Service I would do you. But I really know but one effectual and honourable way to difengage ' yourfelf from the dangerous Situation you are in. ' It is that of Marriage with some Person that you could make happy in your Approbation. As for my own part, it would be, as things stand, my apparent Ruin; and, worse ftill, I should involve ' you in Mifery too. But yet, so great is my Veneration for you, and so entire my Reliance on Pro-' vidence, upon so just an Occasion, that I should ' think myself but too happy, if I might be accepted. 'I would in this Cafe, forego all my Expectations, and be your Conductor to some fafe Distance. But why do I fay, in this Cafe? That I will do, whether you think fit to reward me fo eminently, or not: And I will, the Moment I hear of Mr. B.'s fetting out (and I think now I have fettled 'a very good Method of Intelligence of all his 'Motions), get a Horse ready, and myself to conduct

1.4

188 P A M E L A; Or,

" conduct you. I refer myfelf wholly to your Goodness and Direction, and am, with the

' highest Respect,

· Your most faithful humble Servant.

Don't think this a sudden Resolution. I always ' admired your hear-fay Character; and the

' Moment I faw you, wished to serve so much

· Excellence.'

What shall I say, my dear Father and Mother, to this unexpected Declaration? I want, now, more than ever, your Bleffing and Direction. But, after all, I have no mind to marry: I had rather live with you. But yet, I would marry a Man who begs from Door to Door, and have no Home nor Being, rather than endanger my Honesty. Yet, I cannot, methinks, hear of being a Wife. - After a thousand different Thoughts, I wrote as follows:

· Reverend Sir.

I AM greatly confused at the Contents of your last. You are much too generous, and I can't

bear you should risque all your future Prospects for fo unworthy a Creature. I cannot think of

vour Offer without equal Concern and Gratitude;

for nothing, but to avoid my utter Ruin, can make · me think of a Change of Condition; and so, Sir,

you ought not to except of such an involuntary

· Compliance, as mine would be, were I, upon the

· last Necessity, to yield to your very generous Pro-

opofal. I will rely wholly upon your Goodness to

e me, in affisting my Escape; but shall not, on vour Account principally, think of the Honour

you propose for me, at present; and never, but

at the Pleasure of my Parents, who, poor as they

s are, in such a weighty Point, are as much intitled to my Obedience and Duty, as if they were ever so rich. I beg you, therefore, Sir, onot to think of any-thing from me, but ever-· lasting Gratitude, which will always bind me, to be

· Your most obliged Servant.'

THURSDAY, FRIDAY, SATURDAY, the 14th, 15th, and 16th, of my Bondage.

MRS. Fewkes has receiv'd a Letter, and is much civiller to me, and Mr. Williams too. than she used to be. I wonder I have not one in answer to mine to my Master I suppose I put the Matter too home to him; and he is angry. I am not the more pleas'd with her Civility; for she is horrid cunning, and is not a whit less watchful. I laid a Trap to get at her Instructions, which she carries in the Bosom of her Stays; but it has not fucceeded.

My last Letter is come safe to Mr. Williams by the old Conveyance, fo that he is not suspected. He has intimated, that tho' I have not come fo readily as he hop'd into his Scheme, yet his Diligencé shall not be slacken'd, and he will leave it to Providence and myself, to dispose of him as he shall be found to deserve. He has signify'd to me, that he shall soon send a special Messenger with the Packet to you, and I have added to it what has occurr'd fince.

SUNDAY.

TAM just now quite assonish'd!—I hope all is I right !- but I have a strange Turn to acquaint you with. Mr. Williams and Mrs. Fewkes came both

both together; he in Ecstasies, she with a strange fluttering fort of Air. Well, faid she, Mrs. Pamela. I give you Joy! I give you Joy!-Let no-body speak but me! Then she sat down, as out of Breath, puffing and blowing. Why, every-thing turns as I faid it would! faid she: Why, there is to be a Match between you and Mr. Williams! Well, I always thought it. Never was so good a Master !- Go to, go to, naughty mistrustful Mrs. Pamela, nay, Mrs. Williams, faid the forward Creature, I may as good as call you: you ought on your Knees to beg his Pardon a thousand times for mistrusting him.

She was going on; but I faid, Don't torture me thus, I befeech you, Mrs. Fewkes. Let me know all!-Ah! Mr. Williams, faid I, take care, take care! - Mistrustful again! faid she; why, Mr. Williams, shew her your Letter; and I will shew her mine: They were brought by the same Hand.

I trembled at the Thoughts of what this might mean; and faid, you have so surprised me, that I cannot stand, nor hear, nor read! Why did you come up in fuch a manner to attack fuch weak Spirits? Said he, to Mrs. Fewkes, Shall we leave our Letters with Mrs. Pamela, and let her recover from her Surprize? Ay, faid she, with all my Heart; here is nothing but flaming Honour and Good-will! And so saying, they left me their Letters and withdrew.

My Heart was quite fick with the Surprize; fo that I could not prefently read them, notwithstanding my Impatience; but after a-while, recovering, I found the Contents thus strange and unexpected:

Mr. WILLIAMS,

HE Death of Mr. Fownes has now given me the Opportunity I have long wanted, to ' make you happy, and that in a double respect: ' For I shall soon put you in possession of his Living, and, if you have the Art of making yourself ' well receiv'd, of one of the loveliest Wives in England. She has not been used (as she has Rea-' fon to think) according to her Merit; but when ' she finds herself under the Protection of a Man of Virtue and Probity, and a happy Competency to ' Support Life in the Manner to which she has been of late Years accustom'd, I am pursuaded he will forgive those seeming Hardships which have pav'd the Way to so happy a Lot, as I hope it will be to you both. I have only to account for and excuse the odd Conduct I have been guilty. of, which I shall do when I see you: But as I ' shall soon set out of London, I believe it will not be this Month. Mean time, if you can prevail with Pamela, you need not suspend for that your ' mutual Happiness; only, let me have Notice of ' it first, and that she approves of it; which ought to be, in so material a Point, entirely at her Op-' tion; as I assure you, on the other hand, I would ' have it at yours, that nothing may be wanting to ' complete your Happiness. I am

Your humble Servant.'

Was ever the like heard;—Lie still, my throbbing Heart, divided as thou art, between thy Hopes and thy Fears!—But this is the Letter Mrs. Jewkes left with me:

· Mrs. JEWKES,

the Task, which, for Reason's I shall herearter explain, I had impos'd upon you. Your
Trouble is now almost at an end; for I have
written my Intentions to Mr. Williams so particularly, that I need say the less here, because
he will not scruple, I believe, to let you know the
Contents of my Letter. I have only one thing
to mention, that if you find what I have hinted
to him in the least measure disagreeable to Either,
you assure them Both, that they are at entire
Liberty to pursue their own Inclinations. I hope
you continue your Civilities to the mistrustful, uneasy Pamela, who now will begin to think better
of hers and

" Your Friend, &c.'

I had hardly time to transcribe these Letters, tho', writing fo much, I write pretty fast, before they both came up again, in high Spirits; and Mr. Williams faid, I am glad at my Heart, Madam, that I was beforehand in my Declarations to you: This generous Letter has made me the happiest Man on Earth; and, Mrs. Jewkes, you may be fure, that if I can procure this Fair one's Confent, I shall think myself—I interrupted the good Man, and faid, Ah! Mr. Williams, take care, take care; don't let-There I stopt, and Mrs. Jewkes said, Still mistrustful !- I never saw the like in my Life! -But I fee, faid she, I was not wrong, while my old Orders lasted, to be wary of you both - I should have had a hard Task to prevent you, I find; for, as the Saying is, Nought can restrain Con ent of Twain. I doubted

I doubted not her taking hold of his joyful Indifcretion.—I took her Letter, and said, Here, Mrs. Fewkes, is yours; I thank you for it; but I have been so long in a Maze, that I can say nothing of this for the present. Time will bring all to Light. —Sir, said I, here is yours: May every thing turn to your Happiness! I give you Joy of my Master's Goodness in the Living—It will be dying, said he, not a Living, without you.—Forbear, Sir, said I: While I have a Father and Mother, I am not my own Mistress, poor as they are: And I'll see myself quite at Liberty, before I shall think myself sit to make a Choice.

Mrs. Jewkes held up her Eyes and Hands, and faid, Such Art, such Caution, such Cunning, for thy Years!—Well!—Why, faid I (that he might be more on his Guard, tho' I hope there cannot be Deceit in this; 'twould be strange Villainy, and that is a hard Word, if there should!), I have been so used to be made a Fool of by Fortune, that I hardly can tell how to govern myself; and am almost an Insidel as to Mankind. But I hope I may be wrong; henceforth Mrs. Jewkes, you shall regulate my Opinions as you please, and I will consult you in every thing—(that I think proper, said I to myself)—for, to be sure, tho' I may forgive her, I can never love her.

She left Mr. Williams and me, a few Minutes, together; and I said, Consider, Sir, consider what you have done. 'Tis impossible, said he, thore can be Deceit. I hope so, said I; but what Necessity was there for you to talk of your former Declaration? Let this be as it will, that could do no Good, especially before this Woman. Forgive me, Sir? they talk of Womens Promptness of Speech? but indeed I see an honest Heart is not always to be trusted with itself in bad Company.

VOL. I.

d

He was going to reply, but the her Task is said to be ALMOST (I took notice of that Word) at an end, she came up to us again; and said, Well, I had a good mind to shew you the Way to Church To-morrow. I was glad of this, because, the in my present doubtful Situation I should not have chosen it, yet I would have encouraged her Proposal, to be able to judge by her being in earnest or otherwise, whether one might depend upon the rest. But Mr. Williams again indiscreetly helped her to an Excuse, by saying, that it was now best to defer it one Sunday, and till Matters were riper for my Appearance: and she readily took hold of it, and confirmed his Opinion.

After all, I hope the best; but if this should turn out to be a Plot, I fear nothing but a Miracle can save me. But, sure the Heart of Man is not capable of such black Deceit. Besides, Mr. Williams has it under his own Hand, and he dare not but be in earnest; and then again, tho' to be sure he has been very wrong to me, yet his Education, and Parents Example, have neither of them taught him such very black Contrivances. So I will hope for

the best!

Mr. Williams, Mrs. Jewkes, and I, have been all three walking together in the Garden; and she pulled out her Key, and we walked a little in the Pasture to look at the Bull, an ugly, grim, surly Creature, that hurt the poor Cook-maid; who is got pretty well again. Mr. Williams pointed at the Sunslower, but I was forc'd to be very reserv'd to him; foor the poor Gentleman has no Guard, no Caution at all.

We have just supp'd together, all three; and I cannot yet think but all must be right.—Only I am resolved not to marry, if I can help it; and I will

give no encouragement, I am resolved, at least, till

I am with you.

y

IS

ie

10

;I

m

ill

ve

Mr. Williams said, before Mrs. Jewkes, he would send a Messenger with a Letter to my Father and Mother.—I think the Man has no Discretion in the world: But I desire you will send no Answer, till I have the Pleasure and Happiness, which now I hope for soon, of seeing of you. He will, in sending my Packet, send a most tedious Parcel of Stuff, of my Oppressions, my Distresses, my Fears; and so I will send this with it (for Mrs. Jewkes gives me leave to send a Letter to my Father, which looks well); and I am glad I can conclude, after all my Sufferings, with my Hopes, to be soon with you, which I know will give you Comfort; and so I rest, begging the Continuance of your Prayers and Blessings,

Your ever dutiful Daughter.

My dear Father and Mother,

Have so much Time upon my Hands, that I must write on to employ myself. The Sunday Evening, where I lest off, Mrs. Jewkes asked me, If I chose to lie by myself? I said Yes, with all my Heart, if she pleased. Well said she, after Tonight you shall. I asked her for more Paper, and she gave me a Bottle of Ink, eight Sheets of Paper, which she said was all her Store (for now she would get me to write for her to our Master, if she had occasion), and six Pens, with a Piece of Sealing-Wax. This looks mighty well.

She press'd me, when she came to bed, very much, to give Encouragement to Mr. Williams, and said many things in his Behalf; and blamed my Shyness to him. - I told her, I was resolv'd to give no encouragement, till I had talked to my Father and Mother. She said she fansy'd I thought of somebody else, or I could never be so insensible. I

K 2

affur'd

affur'd her, as I could do very fafely, that there was not a Man on Earth I wish'd to have; and as to Mr. Williams, he might do better by far; and I had proposed so much Happiness in living with my poor Father and Mother, that I could not think of any Scheme of life with Pleasure, till I had try'd that. I asked her for my Money; and she said it was above in her strong Box, but that I shall have it To-morrow. All these Things look well, as I said.

Mr. Williams would go home this Night, tho' late, because he would dispatch a Messenger to you with a Letter he had proposed from himself, and my Packet. But pray don't encourage him, as I said; for he is much too hardy and precipitate as to this Matter, in my way of thinking; tho', to be fore, he is a very good Man, and I am much oblig'd to him.

MONDAY Morning.

A Las-a-day! we have bad News from poor Mr. Williams. He has had a fad Mischance; fallen among Rogues in his Way home last Night: but by good chance has sav'd my Papers. This is the Account he gives of it to Mrs. Jewkes.

· Good Mrs. JEWKES,

- · I Have had a fore Misfortune in going from you.
 When I had got as near the Town as the Dam,
- 4 and was going to cross the wooden Bridge, two
 - · Fellows got hold of me, and swore bitterly they
 - would kill me, if I did not give them what I had.
- · They rummaged my Pockets, and took from me my
- Snuff-Box, my Seal-ring, and Half a Guinea,
- and fome Silver, and Half-pence; also my Hand-kerchief,

of of

kerchief, and two or three Letters I had in my Pocket. By good Fortune the Letter Mrs. Pamela gave me was in my Bosom, and so that escap'd; but they bruised my Head and Face, and cursing ' me for having no more Money, tipp'd me into the Dam, crying, Lie there, Parson, till Tomorrow! My Shins and Knees were bruised much in the Fall against one of the Stomps; and I had like to have been suffocated in Water and Mud. To be fure, I sha'n't be able to stir out this day or two: For I am a frightful Spectacle! my Hat and Wig I was forc'd to leave behind " me, and go home a Mile and a half without; but they were found next Morning, and brought me, with my Shuff-box, which the Rogues must have dropp'd. My Caffock is fadly torn, as is my Band. To be fure, I was much frighted; for a Robbery in these Parts has not been known many Years. Diligent Search is making after the Rogues. My humblest Respects to good Mrs. Pamela: If the pities my Misfortunes, I sha'l be the fooner well, and fit to wait on her and you. This did not hinder me in writing a Letter, tho' with great Pain, as I do this [To be fure this good Man ean keep no Secret !], and sending it away by a Man and Horse, this Morning. I am, good Mrs. Tewkes

Your most obliged humble Servant.

God be prais'd, it is no worse! and I find I have got no Cold, tho' miserably wet from

Top to Toe. My Fright, I believe, pre-

vented me from catching Cold; for I was

onot rightly myself for some Hours, and know

not how I got home. I will write a Letter

198 PAMELA; Or,

of Thanks this Night, if I am able, to my

kind Patron, for his inestimable Goodness

to me. I wish I was enabled to say all I

hope, with regard to the better Part of his

Bounty to me, incomparable Mrs. Pamela.

The wicked Brute fell a laughing, when she had read this Letter, till her fat Sides shook: Said she, I can but think how the poor Parson look'd, after parting with his pretty Mistress in such high Spirits, when he found himself at the Bottom of the Dam! And what a Figure he must cut in his tatter'd Band and Cassock, and without a Hat and Wig, when he got home. I warrant, added she, he was in a Sweet Pickle!—I said I thought it was very barbarous to laugh at such a Missortune: But she reply'd, As he was safe, she laughed; otherwise she should have been forry: And she was glad to see me so concern'd for him—It look'd promising, she said.

I heeded not her Reflection; but as I have been used to Causes for Mistrusts, I cannot help saying, that I don't like this thing: And their taking his Letters most alarms me.—How happy it was, they miss'd my Packet! I know not what to think of it!
—But why should I let every Accident break my

Peace? Yet it will do fo, while I stay here.

Mrs. Jewkes is mightily at me, to go with her in the Chariot, to visit Mr. Williams. She is so officious to bring on the Affair between us, that, being a cunning, artful Woman, I know not what to make of it: I have refus'd her a solutely; urging, that except I intended to encourage his Suit, I ought not to do it. And she is gone without me.

I have strange Temptations to get away in her Absence, for all these fine Appearances. 'Tis sad to have nobody to advise with !—I know not what

to do. But, alas for me! I have no Money, if I should, to buy any-body's Civilities, or to pay for Necessaries or Lodging. But I'll go into the Garden, and resolve afterwards.—

I have been in the Garden, and to the Back-door: And there I stood, my heart up at my Mouth. I could not see I was watch'd; so this looks well. But if any-thing should go bad afterwards, I should never forgive myself, for not taking this Opportunity. Well, I will go down again, and see if all is clear and, how it looks out at the Back-door in the Pasture.

To be sure, there is Witchcraft in this House; and I believe Lucifer is bribed, as well as all about me, and is got into the Shape of that nafty grim Bull, to watch me !- For I have been down again, and ventur'd to open the Door, and went out about a Bow-shot into the Pasture; but there stood that horrid Bull, staring me full in the Face, with fiery fawcer Eyes, as I thought. So I got in again, for fear he should come at me. Nobody saw me, however. - Doyou think there are fuch things as Witches and Spirits? If there be, I believe in my Heart Mrs. Tewkes has got this Bull of her Side. But yet, what could I do without Money, or a Friend? - O this wicked Woman! to trick me fo! Every-thing, Man, Woman, and Beaft, is in a Plot against your poor Pamela, I think !- Then I know not one Step of the Way, nor how far to any House or Cottage; and whether I could gain Protection, if I got to a House: And now the Robbers are abroad too, I may run into as great Danger, as I want to escape; nay, greater much, if these promising Appearances hold: And fure my Master cannot be so black as that they should not! - What can I do? - I have a good mind to try for it once more; but then I K 4

may be pursu'd and taken; and it will be worse for me; and this wicked Woman will beat me, and

take my Shoes away, and lock me up.

But after all, if my Master should mean well, he can't be angry at my Fears, if I should escape; and nobody can blame me; and I can more easily be induced, with you, when all my Apprehensions are over, to consider his Proposal of Mr. Williams, than I could here; and he pretends, as you have read in his Letter, he will leave me to my Choice: Why then should I be afraid? I will go down again, I think! But yet my Heart misgives me, because of the Difficulties before me, in escaping; and being so poor and so friendless!—O good God! the Preserver of the Innocent! direct me what to do!

Well, I have just now a fort of strange Persuasion upon me, that I ought to try to get away, and leave the Issue to Providence. So, once more—I'll see,

at leaft, if this Bull be still there.

Alack-a-day! what a Fate is this! I have not the Courage to go, neither can I think to stay. But I must resolve. The Gardener was in sight last time; so made me come up again. But I'll contrive to send him out of the way, if I can: — For if I never should have such another Opportunity, I could not forgive myself. Once more I'll venture. God direct my Footsteps, and make smooth my Path and my Way to Sasety!

Well, here I am, come back again! frighted, like a Fool, out of all my Purposes! O how terrible every-thing appears to me! I had got twice as far again, as I was before, out of the Back door: and I look'd, and saw the Bull, as I thought, between me and the Door; and another Bull coming towards me the other Way: Well thought I, here is double Witch-

Witchcraft, to be fure! Here is the Spirit of my Master in one Bull, and Mrs. Jewkes's in the other: And now I am gone, to be sure! O help! cry'd I, like a Fool, and ran back to the Door, as swift as if I shew. When I had got the Door in my Hand, I ventur'd to look back, to see if these supposed Bulls were coming; and I saw they were only two poor Cows, a grazing in distant Places, that my Fears had made all this Rout about. But as every thing is so frightful to me, I find I am not sit to think of my Escape: For I shall be as much frighted at the first strange Man that I meet with: And I am persuaded, that Fear brings one into more Dangers, than the Caution, that goes along with it, delivers one from.

I then lock'd the Door, and put the Key in my Pocket, and was in a sad Quandary; but I was soon determined; for the Maid Nan came in sight, and asked, if any-thing was the Matter, that I was so often up and down Stairs? God forgive me; but I had a sad Lye at my Tongue's End: Said I, Tho' Mrs. Jewkes is sometimes a little hard upon me, yet I know not where I am without her: I go up, and I come down to walk about in the Garden: And, not having her, know scarcely what to do with my-felf. Ay, said the Ideot, she is main good Company, Madam, no wonder you miss her.

So here I am again, and here likely to be; for I have no Courage to help myself any-where else. O why are poor foolish Maidens try'd with such Dangers, when they have such weak Minds to grapple with them!—I will, since it is so, hope the best: But yet I cannot but observe how grievously everything makes against me: For here are the Robbers; tho' I fell not into their Hands myself, yet they gave me as much Terror, and had as great an Effect

K 5

upon

upon my Fears, as if I had: And here is the Bull; it has as effectually frightened me, as if I had been hurt by it instead of the Cook-maid; and so these joined together, as I may say, to make a very Dastard of me. But my Folly was the worst of all, because that deprived me of my Money; for had I had that, I believe I should have ventur'd both the Bull and the Robbers.

MONDAY Afternoon.

CO Mrs. Jewkes is returned from her Visit: Well, faid she, I would have you set your Heart at rest; for Mr. Williams will do very well again. He is not half so bad as he fancy'd. O these Scholars, faid she, they have not the Hearts of Mice! He has only a few Scratches on his Face; which, faid the, I suppose he got by grappling among the Gravel at the Bottom of the Dam, to try to find a Hole in the Ground, to hide himself from the Rob-His Shin and his Knee are hardly to be feen to ail any-thing. He says in his Letter, he was a frightful Spectacle: He might be so indeed when he first came in a'doors; but he looks well enough now; and, only for a few Groans now-and-then, when he thinks of his Danger, I fee nothing is the matter with him. So, Mrs. Pamela, faid she, I would have you be very eafy about it. I am glad of it, faid I, for all your Jokes, to Mrs. Fewkes.

Well, said she, he talks of nothing but you; and when I told him, I would fain have persuaded you to come with me, the Man was out of his Wits with his Gratitude to me: And so has laid open all his Heart to me, and told me all that has passed, and was contriving between you two. This alarmed me prodigiously; and the rather, as I saw, by two or three Instances, that his honest Heart could keep nothing, believing every one as undesigning as him-

felf.

felf. I faid, but yet with a heavy Heart, Ah! Mrs. Tewkes, Mrs. Tewkes, this might have done with me, had he had any thing that he could have told you of. But you know well enough, that had we been disposed, we had no Opportunity for it, from your watchful Care and Circumspection. No, faid the, that's very true, Mrs. Pamela; not so much as for that Declaration that he owned before me, he had found Opportunity, for all my Watchfulness, to make you. Come, come, faid the, no more of these Shams with me! You have an excellent Head-piece for your Years; but may-be I am as cunning as you.—However, faid fhe, all is well now; because my Watchments are now over, by my Mafter's Direction. How have you employed yourfelf in my Absence?

I was fo troubled at what might have paffed between Mr. Williams and her, that I could not hide it; and she faid, Well, Mrs. Pamela, since all Matters are likely to be so soon and so happily ended, let me advise you to be a little less concerned at his Discoveries: And make me your Confidant, as he has done, and I shall think you have some Favour for me, and Reliance upon me; and perhaps you

might not repent it.

She was so earnest, that I mistrusted she did this to pump me; and I knew how, now, to account for her Kindness to Mr. Williams in her Visit to him; which was only to get out of him what she could. Why, Mrs. Fewkes, faid I, is all this fishing about for fomething, where there is nothing, if there be an End of your Watchments, as you call them? Nothing, faid she, but womanish Curiosity, I'll affure you; for one is naturally led to find out Matters, where there is fuch Privacy intended. Well, faid I, pray let me know what he has faid; and then I'll give you an Answer to your Curiofity. I don't I don't care, said she, whether you do, or not; for I have as much as I wanted from him; and I despair of getting out of you any-thing you ha'n't a mind I should know, my little cunning Dear.—Well, said I, let him have said what he would, I care not: For I am sure he can say no Harm of me; and so

let us change the Talk.

I was the easier, indeed, because, for all her Pumps, she gave no Hints of the Keys, and the Door, &c. which, had he communicated to her, she would not have forborn giving me a Touch of.—And so we gave up one another, as despairing to gain our Ends of each other. But I am sure he must have said more than he should.—And I am the more apprehensive all is not right, because she has now been actually, these two Hours, shut up a writing; tho she pretended she had given me up all her Stores of Papers, &c. and that I should write for her. I begin to wish I had ventured every-thing, and gone off, when I might. O when will this State of Doubt and Uneasiness end!

She has just been with me, and says she shall send a Messenger to Bedfordshire; and he shall carry a Letter of Thanks for me, if I will write it, for my Master's Favour to me. Indeed, said I, I have no Thanks to give, till I am with my Father and Mother: And besides, I sent a Letter, as you know; but have had no Answer to it. She said, she thought that his Letter to Mr. Williams, was sufficient; and the least I could do was to thank him, if but in two Lines. No need of it, said I; for I don't intend to have Mr. Williams: What then is that Letter to me? Well, said she, I see thou art quite unfathomable!

I don't like all this. Omy foolish Fears of Bulls and Robbers!—For now all my Uneafiness begins to double upon me. O what has this uncautious

Man

Man faid! That, no doubt, is the Subject of her

long Letter.

I will close this Day's writing, with a just faving. that she is mighty filent and referved, to what she was; and fays nothing but No, or Yes, to what I ask. Something must be hatching, I doubt !- I the rather think so, because I find she does not keep her Word with me, about lying by myfelf, and my Money; to both which Points the returned fufpicious Answers, saying, as to the one, Why, you are mighty earnest for your Money; I sha'n't run away with it. And to the other, Good-lack! you need not be fo willing, as I know of, to part with me for a Bedfellow, till you are fure of one you like better. This cut me to the Heart !- And, at the fame time, stopp'd my Mouth.

TUESDAY, WEDNESDAY.

TR. Williams has been here; but we have had no Opportunity to talk together: He feem'd contounded at Mrs. Fewkes's Change of Temper, and Reservedness, after her kind Visit, and their Freedom with one another, and much more at what I am going to tell you. He afk'd, If would take a Turn in the Garden with Mrs. Fewkes and him. No, faid she, I can't go. Said he, May not Mrs. Pamela take a Walk?-No, faid she; I defire she won't. Why, Mrs. Fewkes? faid he: I am afraid I have some how disoblig'd you. Not at all, reply'd' fhe; but I suppose you will soon be at Liberty to walk together as much as you please: And I have sent a Messenger for my last Instructions, about this and more weighty Matters; and when they come I shall leave you to do as you both will; but till then, it is no matter how little you are together. This alarm'd us both; and he feem'd quite struck of a Heap,

Heap, and put on, as I thought, a felf-accusing Countenance. So I went behind her Back, and held my two Hands together, flat, with a Bit of Paper, I had, between them, and look'd at him; and he seem'd to take me as I intended; intimating the renewing of the Correspondence by the Tiles.

I left them both together, and retired to my Closet, to write a Letter for the Tiles; but having no time for a Copy, I will give you the Substance

only.

I expostulated with him on his too great Openness and Easiness to fall into Mrs. Jewkes's Snares; told him my Apprehensions of foul Play; and gave briefly the Reasons which mov'd me: Begged to know what he had said; and intimated, that I thought there was the highest Reason to resume our Project of the Escape by the Back-door. I put this in the usual Place in the Evening; and now wait with Impatience for an Answer.

THURSDAY.

Have the following Answer:

Dearest Madam,

AM utterly confounded, and must plead guilty to all your just Reproaches. I wish I were

· Master of but half your Caution and Discretion !

I hope, after all, this is only a Touch of this ill.

Woman's Temper, to shew her Power and Im-

oportance: For I think Mr. B, neither can nor dare

deceive me in so black a manner. I would expose him all the World over, if he did. But it is not,

cannot be in him. I have receiv'd a Letter from

' John Arnold, in which he tells me, that his Ma-

ter is preparing for his London Journey; and

believes, afterwards, he will come into these Parts ::

But he fays, Lady Davers is at their House, and is to accompany her Brother to London, or meet him there, he knows not which. He professes great Zeal and Affection to your Service: And I find he refers to a Letter he fent me before, but which is not come to my Hand. I think there can be no Treachery; for it is a particular Friend at Gainsborough, that I have ordered him to direct to; and this is come fafe to my Hands by this means; for well I know, I durst trust nothing to Brett, at the Post-house here. This gives me a 6 little Pain; but I hope all will end well, and we fhall foon hear, if it be necessary to pursue our former Intentions. If it be, I will lose no Time to provide a Horfe for you, and another for myfelf: for I can never do either God or myself better Service, tho' I were to forego all my Expectations for it here. I am

· Your most faithful humble Servant.

I was too free indeed with Mrs. Jewkes, led to it by her Dissimulation, and by her pretended Concern to make me happy with you. I hinted, that I would not have scrupled to have procured your Deliverance by any means; and that I had proposed to you, as the only honourable one, Marriage with me. But I assured her, tho' she would hardly believe me, that you discourag'd my Application: Which is too true! But not a Word of the Backdoor, Key, &c.'

Mrs. Jewkes continues still sullen and ill-natur'd, and I am almost afraid to speak to her. She watches me as close as ever, and pretends to wonder why I shun her Company as I do.

I have

I have just put under the Tiles these Lines, inspired by my Fears, which are indeed very strong; and, I doubt, not without Reason.

SIR,

The mis'd Letter of John Arnold's makes me suspect a Plot. Yet am I loth to think myself of so much Importance, as to suppose every one in a Plot against me. Are you sure, however, the London Journey is not to be a Lincolnshire one? May not John, who has been once a Traitor, be so again?—Why need I be thus in doubt?—If I could have this Horse, I would turn the Reins on his Neck, and trust to Providence to guide him for my Safeguard! For I would not endanger you, now just upon the Edge of your Preferment. Yet, Sir, I fear your fatal Openness will make you suspected as accessary, let us be ever so cautious.

Were my Life in question, instead of my Honesty, I would not wish to involve you, or anybody, in the least Difficulty, for so worthless a
poor Creature. But, O Sir! my Soul is of equal
Importance with the Soul of a Princess; though
my Quality is inserior to that of the meanest
Slave.

Save, then, my Innocence, good Heaven! and preferve my Mind spotless; and happy shall I be to lay down my worthless Life; and see an End to all my Troubles and Anxietics!

Forgive my Impatience: But my prelaging
Mind bodes horrid Mischies!—Every-thing
looks dark around me; and this Woman's impenetrable Sullenness and Silence, without any apparent Reason, from a Conduct so very contrary,
bid me fear the worst.—Blame me, Sir, if you
think

think me wrong; and let me have your Advice what to do; which will oblige

· Your most afflicted Servant.'

FRIDAY.

Have this half-angry Answer; but, what is more to me than all the Letters in the World could be, yours, my dear Father, inclosed.

" Madam,

Think you are too apprehensive by much, I am forry for your Uneafiness. You may depend upon me, and all I can do. But I make no Doubt of the London Journey, nor of John's Con-' trition and Fidelity. I have just received, from ' my Gainsborough Friend, this Letter, as I suppose, from your good Father, in a Cover, directed for " me, as I had defired. I hope it contains nothing to add to your Uneafiness. Pray, dearest Madain, ' lay aside your Fears, and wait a few Days for the ' Issue of Mrs. Yewkes's Letter, and mine of Thanks to Mr. B. Things, I hope, must be better than vou expect. Providence will not defert such Piety and Innocence; and be this your Comfort and Reliance: Which is the best Advice that can at opresent be given, by

' Your most faithful humble Servant.'

N. B. The Father's Letter was as follows:

My dearest Daughter,

OUR Prayers are at length heard, and we are overwhelm'd with Joy. O what Sufferings, what Trials, hast thou gone through! Blessed be the Divine Goodness, which has enabled thee

210

to withstand so many Temptations! We have not yet had Leifure to read thro' your long Accounts of all your Hardships. I say long, because I wonder how you could find Time and Opportunity for them; but otherwise they are the Delight of our spare Hours; and we shall read them over and over, as long as we live, with Thankfulness to God, who has given us fo virtuous and so discreet a Daughter. How happy is our Lot, in the midst of our Poverty! O let none ever think Children 'a Burden to them; when the poorest Circumfrances can produce so much Riches in a Pamela! Perfift, my dear Daughter, in the fame excellent ' Course; and we shall not envy the highest Estate, but defy them to produce fuch a Daughter as ours. ' I faid, we had not read thro' all yours in courfe. We were too impatient, and fo turn'd to the End; where we find your Virtue within View of its Reward, and your Master's Heart turn'd to see the Folly of his Ways, and the Injury he had intended to our dear Child: For, to be fure, my Dear, he would have ruin'd you, if he could. But, · feeing your Virtue, his Heart is touch'd; and he has, no doubt, been awaken'd by your good Example.

We don't fee that you can do any way so well, as to come into the present Proposal, and make Mr. Williams, the worthy Mrs. Williams! God bless him!—happy. And tho' we are poor, and can add no Merit, no Reputation, no Fortune, to our dear Child, but rather must be a Disgrace to her, as the World will think; yet I hope I do not sin in my Pride, to say, that there is no good Man, of a common Degree (especially as your late Lady's Kindness gave you such good Opportunities, which you have had the Grace to improve), but may think himself happy in you. But, as your

fay, you had rather not marry at present, far be it from us to offer Violence to your Inclination! So much Prudence as you have shewn in all your Conduct, would make it very wrong in us to mistrust it in this, or to offer to direct you in your Choice. But, alas! my Child, what can we do for you?—To partake our hard Lot, and involve yourself into as hard a Life, would not help us; but add to our Afflictions. But it will be time enough to talk of these Things, when we have the Pleasure you now put us in hope of, of seeing you with us; which God grant. Amen, Amen, say

· Your most indulgent Parents, Amen!

cachinagal assumption alumin

- Our humblest Service and Thanks to the worthy
 Mr. Williams. Again, we say, God bless him
 for ever!
- O what a deal we have to fay to you! God give us a happy Meeting! We understand the 'Squire is setting out for London. He is a fine Gentleman, and has Wit at will. I wish he was as good. But I hope he will now reform.'

O what inexpressible Comfort, my dear Father, has your Letter given me!—You ask, What can you do for me!—What is it you cannot do for your Child!—You can give her the Advice she has so much wanted, and still wants, and will always want: You can confirm her in the Paths of Virtue, into which you first initiated her; and you can pray for her, with Hearts so sincere and pure, that are not to be met with in Palaces!—Oh! how I long to throw myself at your Feet, and receive from your own Lip, the Blessings of such good Parents! But, alas! how are my Prospects again overclouded,

More Trials, more Dangers, I fear, must your poor Pamela be engaged in: But thro' the Divine Goodness, and your Prayers, I hope, at last, to get well out of all my Difficulties; and the rather, as they are not the Effect of my own Vanity or Presumption!

But I will proceed with my hopeless Story. I saw Mr. Williams was a little nettled at my Impatience; and so I wrote to assure him I would be as easy as I could, and wholly directed by him; especially as my Father, whose Respects I mention'd, had assur'd me, my Master was setting out for London, which he must have some-how from of his own Family; or he would not have written me word of it.

SATURDAY, SUNDAY.

R. Williams has been here both these Days, as usual; but is very indifferently received still by Mrs. Jewkes; and, to avoid Suspicion, I lest them together, and went up to my Closet, most of the Time he was here. He and she, I found by her, had a Quarrel; and she seems quite out of Humour with him; but I thought it best not to say anything: And he said, he would very little trouble the House, till he had an Answer to his Letter from Mr. B. And she return'd, The less, the better. Poor Man! he has got but little by his Openness, and making Mrs. Jewkes his Consident, as she bragged, and would have had me to do likewise.

I am more and more satisfied there is Mischief brewing; and shall begin to hide my Papers, and be circumspect. She seems mighty impatient for an

Answer to her Letter to my Master.

MONDAY,

MONDAY, TUESDAY, the 25th and 26th Days of my heavy Restraint.

TILL more and more ftrange things to write! A messenger is return'd, and now all is out! O wretched, wretched Pamela! What, at last, will become of me !- Such strange Turns and Trials fure never poor Creature, of my Years, experienc'd. He brought two Letters, one to Mrs. Jewkes, and one to me: But, as the greatest Wits may be sometimes mistaken, they being folded and sealed alike, that for me was directed to Mrs. Jewkes; and that for her was directed to me. But both are stark naught, abominably bad! She brought me up that directed for me, and faid, Here's a Letter for you: Long Look'd for is come at last. I will ask the Messenger a few Questions, and then I will read mine. So she went down, and I broke it open in my Closet, and found it directed To Mrs. PAMELA ANDREWS. But when I open'd it, it began, Mrs. Tewkes. I was quite confounded; but, thought I, this may be a lucky Mistake; I may discover something. And fo I read on these horrid Contents:

Mrs. TEWKES,

HAT you write me, has given me no small Disturbance. This wretched Fool's Play-thing, no doubt, is ready to leap at any-thing that offers, rather than express the least Sense of Gratitude for all the Benefits she has received from my Family, and which I was determined more and more to heap upon her. I reserve her for my future Resentment; and I charge you double your Diligence in watching her, to prevent her Escape. I fend this by an honest Swiss, who attended me in my Travels; a Man I can trust;

s and so let him be your Assistant: For the artful Greature is enough to corrupt a Nation by her

· feeming Innocence and Simplicity; and she may

have got a Party, perhaps, among my Servants with you, as she has here. Even John Arnold,

whom I confided in, and favoured more than any,

has proved an execrable Villain; and shall meet

his Reward for it.

As to that College Nevice Williams, I need not bid you take care he sees not this painted Bauble: for I

have order'd Mr. Shorter, my Attorney, to throw him instantly into Gaol, on an Action of Debt,

for Money he has had of me, which I had intended

never to carry to account against him; for I know
 all his rascally Practices, besides what you write

me of his pertidious Intrigue with that Girl, and

his acknowledged Contrivances for her Escape;

when he knew not, for certain, that I design'd her

any Mischief; and when, if he had been guided

by a Sense of Piety, or Compassion for injured In-

nocence, as he pretends, he would have expostu-

· lated with me, as his Function, and my Friendship

for him, might have allowed him. But to enter

' into a vile Intrigue with the amiable Gewgaw, to

favour her Escape in so base a manner (to say no-

thing of his difgraceful Practices against me, in Sir

Simon Darnford's Family; of which Sir Simon him-

· felf has informed me), is a Conduct, that instead

of preferring the ungrateful Wretch, as I had in-

tended, shall pull down upon him utter Ruin.

Monsieur Colbrand, my trusty Swifs, will obey

you without Reserve, if my own Servants re-

As for her denying that she encouraged his De-

claration, I believe it not. 'Tis certain the speaking Picture, with all that pretended Innocence

and Bashfulness, would have run away with him.

· Yes.

- Yes, the would run away with a Fellow that the
- 4 had been acquainted with (and that not intimate-
- · ly, if you were as careful as you ought to be) but
- few Days; at a time, when the had the strongest
- · Assurances of my Honour to her.
- Well, I think, I now hate her perfectly; and
- tho' I will do nothing to her myfelf, yet I can bear,
- for the fake of my Revenge, and my injur'd Ho-
- o nour, and Righted Love, to see any-thing, even
- what she most fears, be done to her; and then she
- may be turn'd loofe to her evil Destiny, and echo
- to the Woods and Groves her piteous Lamenta-
- tions for the Loss of her fantastical Innocence.
- which the romantic Ideot makes fuch a work about.
- " I shall go to London, with my Sister Davers; and
- the Moment I can disengage myself, which per-
- haps may be in three Weeks from this time, I will
- be with you, and decide her Fate, and put an end
- to your Trouble. Mean time, be doubly careful;
- for this Innocent, as I have warn'd you, is full of
- Contrivances. I am

k-

ce

n.

S,

" Your Friend."

I had but just read this dreadful Letter thro', when Mrs. Fewkes came up, in a great Fright, gueffing at the Mistake, and that I had her Letter; and she, found me with it open in my Hand, just finking away. What Business, said she, had you to read my Letter? and fnatch'd it from me. You fee, faid she, looking upon it, it fays, Mrs. Jewkes, at top. You ought, in Manners, to have read no further. O add not, faid I, to my Afflictions! I shall be soon out of all your Ways! This is too much! too much! I never can support this—and threw myself upon the Couch, in my Closet, and wept most bitterly. She read it in the next Room, and came in again afterafterwards: Why this, faid she, is a fad Letter indeed: I am forry for it: But I fear'd you would carry vour Niceties too far !- Leave me, leave me, Mrs. Jewkes, faid I, for a while: I cannot speak nor talk. Poor Heart! faid she; well, I'll come up again presently, and hope to find you better. But here, take your own Letter; I wish you well; but this is a fad Mistake! And so she put down by me that which was intended for me: But I have no Spirit to read it at present. O Man! Man! hard-hearted, cruel Man; what Mischies art thou not capable of,

unrelenting Persecutor as thou art!

I fat ruminating, when I had a little come to myfelf, upon the Terms of this wicked Letter; and had no Inclination to look into my own. The bad Names, Fool's play-thing, artful Creature, painted Bauble, Gewgaw. Speaking Picture, are hard Words for your poor Pamela! and I began to think whether I was not indeed a very naughty Body, and had not done vile Things: But when I thought of his having discovered poor John, and of Sir Simon's base Officiousness, in telling him of Mr. Williams, with what he had refolved against him, in revenge for his Goodness to me, I was quite dispirited; and yet still more, about that fearful Colbrand, and what he could fee done to me; for then I was ready to gasp for Breath, and my Heart quite failed me. Then how dreadful are the Words, that he will decide my Fate in three Weeks! Gracious Heaven. faid I, strike me dead, before that time, with a Thunderbolt, or provide some way for my escaping these threaten'd Mischiess ! God forgive me, if I finned!

At last, I took up the Letter directed for Mrs. Yewkes, but designed for me; and I find that little better than the other. These are the hard Terms it contains:

W ELL have you done, perverse, forward, art-ful, yet foolish Pamela, to convince me, before it was too late, how ill I had done to place iny Affections on so unworthy an Object, I had wow'd Honour and Love to your Unworthiness. believing you a Mirror of bashful Modesty and unspotted Innocence; and that no perfidious Defigns lurked in so fair a Bosom. But now 'I have found you out, you specious Hypocrite! ' and I fee, that tho' you could not repose the 'least Confidence in one you had known for ' Years, and who, under my good Mother's mif-' placed Favour for you, had grown up in a mane ner with you; when my Passion, in spite of my Pride, and the Difference of our Condition made me floop to a Meannels that now I despite my ' felf for; yet you could enter into an Intrigue with a Man you never knew till within these few Days pail, and resolve to run away with a Stranger, whom your fair Face, and infinuating Arts, had bewitch'd to break thro' all the Ties of Hoo nour and Gratitude to me, even at a time when the Happiness of his future Life depended upon my

Henceforth, for Pamela's fake, whenever I fee a lovely Face, will I mistrust a deceitful Heart:
And whenever I hear of the greatest Pretences to Innocence, will I suspect some deep-laid Mischief.
You were determined to place no Considence in me, tho' I have solemnly, over and over, engaged my Honour to you. What, tho' I had alarm'd your Fears in sending you one Way, when you hoped to get another; yet, had I not, to convince you of my Resolution to do justly by you (altho' with great Reluctance, such then was my Love for you), engaged not to come near you without Vol. I.

2+8 PAMELA; Or,

- ' your own Confent? Was not this a voluntary De-
- monttration of the Generofity of my Intention to
- ' you? Yet how have you requited me? The very
- first Fellow that your charming Face, and infinu-
- ating Address, could influence, you have practis'd
- · upon, corrupted too, I may fay (and even ruin'd,
- as the ungrateful Wretch thall find), and thrown
- ' your forward Self upon him. As, therefore, you
- would place no Confidence in me, my Honour
- owes you nothing; and in a little time you shall
- find how much you have erred in treating, as you
- have done, a Man who was once

· Your affectionate and kind Friend.

- · Mrs. Fewkes has Directions concerning you:
 - . And if your Lot is now harder than you might
 - wifh, you will bear it the easier, because your
 - own rafh Folly has brought it upon you.

Alas! for me, what a Fate is mine, to be thus thought artful, and forward, and ungrateful! when all I intended was to preferve my Innocence; and when all the poor little Shifts, which his superior wicked Wit and Cunning have render'd ineffectual, were forced upon me in my own necessary Defence!

When Mrs. Fewkes, came up to me again, she found me bathed in Tears. She seem'd, as I thought, to be mov'd to some Compassion; and finding myself now entirely in her Power, and that is not for me to provoke her, I said, It is now, I see, in vain for me to contend against my evil Destiny, and the superior Arts of my barbarous Master. I will resign myself to the Divine Will, and prepare to expect the worst. But you see how this poor Mr. Williams

is drawn in and undone; I am forry I am made the Caufe of bis Ruin :- Poor, poor Man !- to be thus involved, and for my fake too !- But if you'll believe me, faid I. I gave no Encouragement to what he proposed, as to Marriage; nor would he have proposed it. I believe, but as the only honourable way he thought was left to fave me: And his principal Motive to it all, was Virtue and Compassion to one in Distress. What other View could he have? You know I am poor and friendless. All I beg of you is, to let the Poor Gentleman have Notice of my Master's Resentment; and let him fly the Country, and not be thrown into Gaol. This will answer my Master's End as well; for it will as effectually hinder him from affifting me, as if he was in a Prifon, bug of maged and thing listing believes

Ask me, said she, to do any-thing that is in my Power, confiftent with my Duty and Truft, and I will do it; for I am forry for you both. But, to be fure. I shall keep no Correspondence with him. nor let you. I offer'd to talk of a Duty superior to that the mentioned, which would oblige her to help distressed Innocence, and not permit her to go the Lengths injoined by lawless Tyranny; but she plainly bid me be filent on that Head; for it was in vain to attempt to persuade her to betray her Trust: -All I have to advise you, faid she, is to be easy; lay aside all your Contrivances and Arts to get away, and make me your Friend, by giving me no Reason to suspect you; for I glory in my Fidelity to my Master: And you have both practifed fome strange fly Arts. to make fuch a Progress as he has own'd there was between you, fo feldom as I thought you faw one another! and I must be more circumspect than I have been. You of the carried the man and the

This doubled my Concern; for I now apprehended Ishould be much closer watch'd than before.

THE PERSON

Well, said I, since I have, by this strange Accident, discover'd my hard Destiny; let me read over again that searful Letter of yours, that I may get it by heart, and with it seed my Distress, and make Calamity samiliar to me. Then, said she, let me read yours again. I gave her mine, and she lent me hers; and so I took a Copy of it, with her Leave; because as I said, I would, by it, prepare myself for the worst. And when I had done, I pinn'd it on the Head of the Couch: This, said I, is the Use I shall make of this wretched Copy of your Letter; and here you shall always find it wet with my Tears.

She faid, she would go down to order Supper; and infifted upon my Company to it; I would have excused myself; but she began to put on a commanding Air, that I durst not oppose. And when I went down, she took me by the Hand, and prefented me to the most hideous Monster I ever saw in my Life. Here, Monsieur Colbrand, said she, here is your pretty Ward and mine; let us try to make her Time with us easy. He bowed, and put on his foreigh Grimaces, and feem'd to blefs himfelf; and, in broken English, told me, I was happy in de Affections of de vinest Gentleman in de Varld !- I was quite frighten'd, and ready to drop down; and I will describe him to you, my dear Father and Mother, if now you will ever fee this; and you shall judge if I had not Reason, especially not knowing he was to be there, and being appris'd, as I was, of his hated Employment, to watch me closer.

He is a Giant of a Man for Stature; taller by a good deal than Harry Mawridge, in your Neighbourhood, and large-bon'd, and scraggy; and has a Hand!—I never saw such an one in my Life. He has great staring Eyes, like the Bull's that frighten'd me so; vast Jaw-bones sticking out; Eyebrows

hanging

hanging over his Eyes; two great Scars upon his Forehead, and one on his Left Cheek; and two large Whiskers, and a monstrous wide Mouth; blubber Lips; long yellow Teeth, and a hideous Grin. He wears his own frightful long Hair, ty'd up in a great black Bag; a black Crape Neckcloth about a long ugly Neck; and his Throat sticking out like a Wen. As to the rest, he was dress'd well enough, and had a Sword on, with a nafty red Knot to it; Leather Garters, buckled below his Knees; and a Foot-near as long as my Arm, I elember 13 m

verily think.

He faid, He fright de Lady; and offer'd to withdraw; but she bid him not; and I told Mrs. Jewkes, That as she knew I had been crying she should not have called me to the Gentleman without letting me know he was there. I foch went up to my Closet; for my Heart aked all the Time I was at Table, not being able to look upon him without Horror; and this Brute of a Woman, tho' the faw my Distress, before this Addition to it, no doubt did it on purpose to strike more Terror into me. And indeed it had its Effect; for when I went to-bed, I could think of nothing but his hideous Person, and my Master's more hideous Actions; and thought them too well pair'd; and when I dropt afleep, I dream'd they were both coming to my Bed-fide, with the worst Designs; and I jump'd out of my Bed in my Sleep, and frighted Mrs. Jewkes; till, waking with the Terror, I told her my Dream: And the wicked Creature only laughed, and faid, All I fear'd was but a Dream, as well as that; and when it was over, and I was well awake, I should laugh at it as such being a lat

for not would have the extense Where we can composited to being a bus ordered grow on Lander

And now I am come to the Close of WEDNESDAY, the 27th Day of my Distress.

POOR Mr. Williams is actually arrested, and carried away to Stamford. So there is an End of all my Hopes from him. Poor Gentleman! his Over-security and Openness have ruined us both! I was but too well convinced, that we ought not to have lost a Moment's Time; but he was half angry, and thought me too impatient; and then his fatal Confessions, and the detestable Artifice of my Master!—But one might well think, that he who had so cunningly, and so wickedly, contrived all his Stratagems hitherto, that it was impossible to avoid them, would stick at nothing to complete them. I fear I shall soon find it so!

But one Stratagem I have just invented, tho' a very discouraging one to think of; because I have neither Friends nor Money, nor know one Step of the Way, if I was out of the House. But let Bulls, and Bears, and Lions, and Tygers, and, what is worse, false, treacherous, deceitful Men, stand in my Way, I cannot be in more Danger than I am; and I depend nothing upon his three Weeks: For how do I know, now he is in such a Passion, and has already begun his Vengeance on poor Mr. Williams, that he will not change his Mind, and come down

to Lincolnshire before he goes to London?

My Stratagem is this: I will endeavour to get Mrs. Jewkes, to go to-bed without me, as she often does, while I sit lock'd up in my Closet; and as she sleeps very sound in her first Sleep, of which she never fails to give notice by Snoring, if I can but then get out between the two Bars of the Window (for you know I am very slender, and I find I can get my Head thro'), then I can drop upon the Leads underneath,

neath, which are little more than my Height, and which Leads are over a little Summer-parlour, that juts out towards the Garden; and as I am light, I can eafily drop from them; for they are not high from the Ground: Then I shall be in the Garden; and then, as I have the Key of the Back-door, I will get out. But I have another Piece of Cunning still; good Heaven, succeed to me my dangerous, but innocent Devices !- I have read of a great Captain, who, being in Danger, leap'd over-board, into the Sea; and his Enemies, as he fwam, shooting at him with Bows and Arrows, he unloofed his upper Garment, and took another Course, while they fluck that full of their Darts and Arrows; and fo he escaped, and lived to triumph over them all. So what will I do, but firip of my upper Petticoat, and throw it into the Pond, with my Neckhandkerchief? For to be fure, when they miss me, they will go to the Pond first, thinking I have drown'd myfelf; and fo, when they fee some of my Cloaths floating there, they will be all employ'd in dragging the Pond, which is a very large one; and as I shall not, perhaps; be mis'd till the Morning, this will give me Opportunity to get a great Way off; and I am fure I will run for it when I am out. And fo I truft, that Providence will direct my Steps to some good Place of Safety, and make force .. worthy Body my Friend; for fure, if I fuffer ever so, I cannot be in more Danger, non in work-Hands, than where I am ; and with fuch avowed bad Defigns.

O my dear Parents! don't be frighted when you come to read this !- But all will be over before you can fee it; and fo God direct me for the best! My Writings, for fear I should not escape, I will bury in the Garden; for, to be fure, I shall be search'd,

Shally feel was a mark to also which the

224 PAMELA; Or,

and used dreadfully, if I can't get off. And so I will close here, for the present, to prepare for my Plot. Prosper thou, O gracious Protector of oppressed Innocence! this last Effort of thy poor Handmaid! that I may escape the crasty Devices and Snaresthat have begun to entangle my Virtue! and from which, but by this one Trial, I see no way of escaping! And Oh! whatever becomes of me, bless my dear Paren s, and protect poor Mr. Williams from Ruin! for he was happy before he knew me!

Just now, just now! I heard Mrs. Jewkes, who is in her Cups, own to the horrid Colbrand, that the Robbing of poor Mr. Williams was a Contrivance of hers, and executed by the Groom and a Helper, in order to seize my Letters upon him, which they miss'd. They are now both laughing at the dismal Story, which they little think I overheard—O how my Heart akes! for what are not such Wretches capable of! Can you blame me for endeavouring, thro' any Danger, to get out of such Clutches?

Paft Eleven o'Clock.

MRS. Jewkes is come up, and gone to bed; and bids me not stay long in my Closet, but come to-bed. O for a dead Sleep for the treacherous Brute! I never saw her so tipsy, and that gives me Hopes. I have try'd again, and find I can get my Head thro' the Iron Bars, I am now all prepared, as soon as I hear her sast; and now I'll seal up these, and my other Papers, my last Work: And to thy Providence, O my gracious God, commit the rest!

—Once more, God bless you both! and send us a happy Meeting; if not here, in his heavenly Kingdom. Amen.

THURSDAY, FRIDAY, SATURDAY, SUNDAY, the 28th, 29th, 30th, and 31st Days of my Distress.

A ND Distress indeed! For here I am still! And every-thing has been worse and worse! Oh! the poor unhappy Pamela!—Without any Hope lest, and ruin'd in all my Contrivances. But, Oh! my dear Parents, rejoice with me, even in this low Plunge of my Distress, for your poor Pamela has escap'd from an Enemy worse than any she ever met with; an Enemy she never thought of before, and was hardly able to stand against: I mean, the Weakness and Presumption, both in one, of her own Mind; which had well nigh, had not the Divine Grace interposed; sunk her into the lowest, last Abys of Misery and Perdition!

I will proceed, as I have Opportunity, with my fad Relation: For my Pen and Ink (in my now doubly-fecur'd Closet) is all I have to employ myself with. And indeed I have been so weak, that, till Yesterday Evening, I have not been able to hold a Pen.

I took with me but one Shift, befides what I had on, and two Handkerchiefs, and two Caps, which my Pocket held (for it was not for me to incumber myself), and all my Stock of Money, which was but five or fix Shillings, to set out for I knew not where; and got out of the Window, not without some Difficulty, sticking a little at my Shoulders and Hips; but I was resolved to get out if possible. And it was farther from the Leads than I thought, and I was afraid I had sprain'd my Ancle; and when I had dropt from the Leads to the Ground, it was still farther off; but I did pretty well there; at least, I got no Hurt to hinder me from pursuing my Intentions.

Papers under a Rose-bush, and covered them with Mould, and there they still lie, as I hope. Then I hy'd away to the Pond: The Clock struck Twelve, just as I got out; and it was a dark misty Night, and very cold; but I selt it not then.

When I came to the Pond-side, I slung in my Upper-coat, as I had defign'd, and my Neck-handkerchief, and a round-ear'd Cap, with a Knot; and then with great Speed ran to the Door, and took the Key out of my Pocket, my poor Heart beating all the time against my Bosom, as if it would have forced its Way thro' it: And beat it well might! For I then, too late, found, that I was most miserably disappointed; for the wicked Woman had taken off that Lock, and put another on; so that my Key would not open it. I try'd, and try'd, and feeling about, I found a Padlock besides, on another Part of the Door. O then how my Heart funk !- I dropt down with Grief and Confusion, unable to stir or fupport myself, for a while But my Fears awakening my Resolution, and knowing that my Attempt would be as terrible for me as any other Danger I could then encounter, I clambered up upon the Ledges of the Door, and upon the Lock, which was a great wooden one; and reached the Top of the Door with my Hands; then, little thinking I could climb fo well, I made shift to lay hold on the Top of the Wall with my Hands; but, alas for me! nothing but ill Luck !—no Escape for poor Pamela! The Wall being old, the Bricks I held by gave way, just as I was taking a Spring to get up; and down came I, and received fuch a Blow upon my Head, with one of the Bricks, that it quite flunn'd me; and I broke my Shins and my Ancle besides, and beat off the Heel of one of my Shoes. In

In this dreadful way, flat upon the Ground, lay poor I, for I believe five or fix Minutes; and then trying to get up, I funk down again two or three times; and my Left Hip and Shoulder were very stiff, and full of Pain, with Bruises; and besides, my Head bled, and aked grievously with the Blow I had with the Brick .- Yet thefe Hunts I valu'd not; but crept a good Way, upon my Feet and Hands, in fearch of a Ladder, I just recollected to have feen against the Wall two Days before, on which the Gardener was nailing a Nectarine branch, that was loosen'd from the Wall: But no Ladder could I find, and the Wall was very high. What now, thought I, must become of the miserable Pamela! -Then I began to wish myself most heaptily again in my Closet, and to repent of my Attempt, which I now censured as rash, because it did not fucceed.

God forgive me! but a fad Thought came just then into my Head!—I tremble to think of it! Indeed my Apprehensions of the Usage I should meet with, had like to have made me miserable for ever! O my dear, dear Parents, forgive your poor Child; but being then quite desperate, I crept along, till I could raise myself on my staggering Feet; and away limp't I!-What to do, but to throw myself into the Pond, and so put a Period to all my Griefs in this World!—But, O! to find them infinitely aggravated (had I not, by the Divine Grace, been with-held) in a miferable Eternity! As I have escaped this Temptation (blessed be God for it!) I will tell you my Conflicts on this dreadful Occasion, that the Divine Mercies may be magnify'd in my Deliverance, that I am yet on this Side the dreadful Gulph, from which there could have been no Return. on sing soult want the white way had said

It was well for me, as I have fince thought, that I was fo maim'd, as made me the longer before I got to the Water; for this gave me time to consider, and abated the Impetuousness of my Passions, which possibly might otherwise have hurried me, in my first Transport of Grief (on my seeing no way to escape, and the hard Usage I had Reason to expect from my dreadful Keepers), to throw myself in. But my Weakness of Body made me move so slowly. that it gave time, as I faid, for a little Reflection. a Ray of Grace, to dart in upon my benighted Mind; and fo, when I came to the Pond-fide, I fat myself down on the sloping Bank, and began to ponder my wretched Condition; and thus I reason'd with myfelf:

Pause here a little, Pamela, on what thou art about, before thou takest the dreadful Leap; and consider whether there be no Way yet left, no Hope, if not to escape from this wicked House, yet from

the Mischiess threaten'd thee in it.

I then consider'd; and, after I had cast about in my Mind every-thing that could make me hope, and faw no Probability; a wicked Woman, devoid of all Compassion! a horrid Helper, just arrived in this dreadful Golbrand! an angry and refenting Mafter, who now hated me, and threaten'd the most afflicting Evils! and that I should, in all Probability, be deprived even of the Opportunity I now had before me, to free myself from all their Persecutions !- What haft thou to do, diffressed Creature, faid I to myself, but throw thyself upon a merciful God (who knows how innocently I fuffer), to avoid the merciless Wickedness of those who are determined on my Ruin?

And then thought I (and Oh! that Thought was furely of the Devil's Instigation; for it was very soothing, and powerful with me), these wicked Wretches, who now have no Remorfe, no Pity on me, will then be mov'd to lament their Misdoings; and when they fee the dead Corpfe of the unhappy Pamela dragg'd out to these dewy Banks, and lying breathless at their Feet, they will find that remorfe to foften their obdurate Heart, which, now, has no Place there !-And my Mafter, my angry Mafter, will then forget his Refentments, and fay, O this is the unhappy Pamela! that I have so causelessly persecuted and deftroy'd! Now do I see she preferr'd her Honesty. to her Life, will he fay, and is no Hypocrite, nor Deceiver; but really was the innocent Creature she pretended to be! Then, thought I, will he, perhaps, shed a few Tears over the poor Corpse of his perfecuted Servant; and, tho' he may give out, it was Love and Disappointment, and that, perhaps (in order to hide his own Guilt), for the unfortunate Mr. Williams; yet will he be inwardly griev'd, and order me a decent Funeral, and fave me, or rather this Part of me, from the dreadful Stake, and the Highway Interrment; and the young Men and Maidens all around my dear Father's will pity poos Pamela! But O! I hope I shall not be the subject of their Ballads and Elegies; but that my Memory. for the fake of my dear Father and Mother, may quickly slide into Oblivion.

I was once rising, so indulgent was I to this sad way of Thinking, to throw myself in: But again, my Bruises made me slow; and I thought, What art thou about to do, wretched Pamela? How knowest thou, tho' the Prospect be all dark to thy short-sighted Eye, what God may do for thee, even when all human Means fail? God Almighty would not lay me under these sore Afflictions, if he had not given me Strength to grapple with them, if I will exert it as I ought: And who knows, but that the very Presence I so much dread of my angry and designing Master

for he has had me in his Power before, and yet I have escaped) may be better for me, than these perfecuting Emissaries of his, who, for his Money, are true to their wicked Trust, and are harden'd by that, and a long habit of Wickedness, against Compunction of Heart? God can touch his Heart in an Instant; and if this should not be done, I can then but put an end to my Life by some other Means, if I am so resolved.

But how do I know, thought I, that even these Bruises and Maims that I have gotten, while I pursu'd only the laudable Escape I had meditated, may not kindly have furnish'd me with the Opportunity I now am tempted with to precipitate myself, and of surrendering up my Life, spotless, and unguilty, to

that merciful Being who gave it!

Then, thought I, who gave thee, prefumptuous as thou art, a Power over thy Life? Who authoriz'd thee to put an end to it, when the Weakness of thy Mind suggests not to thee a way to preserve it with Honour? How knowest thou what Purposes God may have to serve, by the Trials with which thou art now exercised? Art thou to put a Bound to the Divine Will, and to say, Thus much will I hear, and no more? And wilt thou dare to say, That if the Trial be augmented, and continued, thou wilt sooner die than bear it?

This act of Despondency, thought I, is a Sin, that, if I pursue it, admits of no Repentance, and can therefore hope no Forgiveness.—And wilt thou, to shorten thy transitory Griefs, heavy as they are, and weak as thou fansiest thyself, plunge both Body and Soul into everlasting Misery! Hitherto, Pamela, thought I, thou art the innocent, the suffering Pamela; and wilt thou, to avoid thy Sufferings, be the guilty Aggressor? And, because wicked Men perfecute thee, wilt thou say in the Face of the Almighty,

mighty, and distrust his Grace and Goodness, who can still turn all these Sufferings to Benefits? And how do I know, but that God, who sees all the lurking Vileness of my Heart, may have permitted these Sufferings on that very Score, and to make me rely solely on his Grace and Assistance, who perhaps have too much pride myself in a vain Dependence

on my own foolish Contrivances!

Then again, thought I, wilt thou suffer in one Moment all the good Lessons of thy poor honest Parents, and the Benesit of their Example (who have persisted in doing their Duty with Resignation to the Divine Will, amidst the extreme Degrees of Disappointment, Poverty, and Distress, and the Persecutions of an ungrateful World, and merciless Creditors), to be thrown away upon thee; and bring down, as in all Probability this thy Rashness will, their grey Hairs with forrow to the Grave, when they shall understand, that their beloved Daughter, slighting the Tenders of Divine Grace, despairing of the Mercies of a protecting God, has blemish'd, in this last Ast, a whole Life, which they had hitherto approv'd and delighted in?

What then, presumptuous Pamela, dost thou bere? thought I: Quit with Speed these perilous Banks, and sly from these curling Waters, that seem, in their meaning Murmurs, this still Night, to reproach thy Rashness! Tempt not God's Goodness on the mosty Banks, that have been Witnesses of thy guilty Purpose; and while thou hast Power lest thee, avoid the tempting Evil, lest thy grand Enemy, now repuls'd by Divine Grace, and due Resection, return to the Assault with a Force that thy Weakness may not be able to resist! and let one rash Moment destroy all the Convictions, which now have aw'd thy rebellious Mind into Duty and Resignation to the Livine Will!

And so saying, I arose; but was so stiff with my Hurts, so cold with the moist Dew of the Night, and the wet Grass on which I had sat, as also with the Damps arising from so large a Piece of Water, that with great Pain I got from this Pond, which now I think of with Terror; and bending my limping Steps towards the House, took Refuge in the Corner of an Out-house, where Wood and Coals are laid up for Family Use, till I should be found by my cruel Keepers, and consign'd to a more wretched Consinement, and worse Usage, than I had hitherto experienc'd; and there behind a Pile of Fire-wood I crept, and lay down, as you may imagine, with a Mind just broken, and a Heart sensible to nothing but the extremest Woo and Dejection.

This, my dear Father and Mother, is the Iffue of your poor Pamela's fruitless Enterprize; and who knows, if I had got out at the Back-door. whether I had been at all in a better Case, moneyless, friendless, as I am, and in a strange Place! But blame not your poor. Daughter too much: Nay, if ever you fee this miserable Scribble, all. bathed aud blotted with my Tears, let your Pity get. the better of your Reprehension! But I know it will.-And I must leave off for the present .- For, Oh! my Strength and my Will are at this time very far unequal to one another .- But yet I will add, that tho' I should have prais'd God for my Deliverance, had I been freed from my wicked Keepers, and my defigning Mafter; yet I have more abundant Reason to praise him, that I have been delivered from a: worse Enemy, myself!

I will conclude my fad Relation.

It feems, Mrs. Jewkes awaked not till Day-break; and not finding me in Bed, the call'd me; and, no Answer

Answer being return'd, she relates, that she got out of Bed; and ran to my Closet; and, missing me, searched under the Bed, and in another Closet, finding the Chamber door as she had left it, quite fast, and the Key, as usual, about her Wrist. For if I could have got out of the Chamber door, there were two or three Passages and Doors to them all, double-lock'd and barr'd, to go thro', into the great Garden; so that, to escape, there was no Way, but out of the Window; and of that Window, because of the Summer-parlour under it; for the other Windows are a great Way from the Ground.

She fays, she was excessively frighted; and instantly rais'd the Swiss, and the Two Maids, who lay not far off; and finding every Door fast, she said, I must be carry'd away, as St. Peter was out of Prison, by some Angel. It is a Wonder she had

not a worse Thought!

She fays, she wept, and wrung her Hands, and took on fadly, running about like a mad Woman, little thinking I could have got out of the Closet Window, between the Iron Bars; and indeed I don't know whether I could do so again. But at last finding that Casement open, they concluded it must be so; and ran out into the Garden, and sound my Footsteps in the Mould of the Bed which I dropt down upon from the Leads. And so speeded away, all of them, that is to say, Mrs. Fewkes, Colbrand, and Nan, towards the Back-door, to see if that was fast; while the Cook was sent to the Out-offices to raise the Men, and make them get Horses ready, to take each a several Way to pursue me.

But it seems, finding that Door double lock'd and padlock'd, and the Heel of my Shoe, and the broken Bricks, they verily concluded I was got away by some means over the Wall; and then, they say, Mrs. Yewker seem'd like a distracted Woman: Till.

at last Nan had the thought to go towards the Pond; and there feeing my Coat, and Cap, and Handkerchief, in the Water, cast almost to the Banks by the Agitation of the Waves, the thought it was I; and, screaming out, ran to Mrs. Fewkes, and faid, O Madam, Madam! here's a piteous Thing!-Mrs. Pamela lies drown'd in the Pond-Tnither they all ran; and, finding my Cloaths, doubted not I was at the Bottom; and they all, Swifs among the rest, beat their Breasts, and made most dismal Lamentations; and Mrs. Tewkes sent Nan to the Men, to bid them get the Drag-net ready, and leave the Horses, and come to try to find the poor Innocent! as the it feems then call'd me, beating her Breaft, and lamenting my hard Hap; but most what would become of them, and what Account they should give to my Master. .

While every one was thus differently employ'd, fome weeping and wailing, some running here and there, Non came into the Wood-house; and there lay poor I; so weak, so low, and dejected, and withal to friff with my Bruiles, that I could not ftir, nor help myself to get upon my Feet. And I said, with a low Voice (for I could hardly speak), Mrs. Ann, Mrs. Ann!-The Creature was fadly frighted, but was taking up a Billet to knock me on the Head, believing I was some Thief, as the faid; but I cry'd out, O Mrs. Ann, Mrs. Ann, belo me, for Pity's fake, to Mrs. Fewkes! for I cannot get up!-Bless me, faid the, what! you, Madam !- Why, our Hearts are almost broken, and we are going to drag the Pond for you, believing you had drowned yourself. Now, faid the, you'll make us all alive again!

And, without helping me, she ran away to the Pond, and brought all the Crew to the Woodhouse.—The wicked Woman, as she enter'd, said, Where is she !—Plague of her Spells, and her

Witchcrafts! She shall dearly repent of this Trick, if my name be Fewkes; and, coming to me, took hold of my Arm so roughly, and gave me such a Pull, as made me squeal out (my Shoulder being bruised on that Side), and drew me on my Face. O cruel Creature! said I, if you knew what I have suffer'd,

it would move you to pity me!

Even Colbrand seem'd to be concern'd, and said, Fie, Madam, sie! you see she is almost dead! You must not be so rough with her. The Coachman Robin seem'd to be sorry for me too, and said with Sobs, What a Scene is here! Don't you see she is all bloody in her Head, and cannot stir?—Curse of her Contrivances! said the horrid Creature; she has frighted me out of my Wits, I'm sure. How the D—I came you here!—O! said I, ask me now no Questions, but let the Maids carry me up to my Prison; and there let me die decently, and in Peace! For indeed I thought I could not live two Hours.

The still more inhuman Tygres said, I suppose you want Mr. Williams to pray by you, don't you? Well, I'll send for my Master this Minute; let him come and watch you himself, for me; for there's

no fuch thing as holding you, I'm fure.

So the Maids took me up between them, and carry'd me to my Chamber; and when the Wretch faw how bad I was, the began a little to relent—while every one wonder'd (at which I had neither Strength nor Inclination to tell them) how all this came to pass, which they imputed to Sorcery and Witcheraft.

I was so weak, when I had got up Stairs, that I fainted away, with Dejection, Pain and Vatigue; and they undress'd me, and got me to Bed; and Mrs. Jewkes order'd Nan to bathe my Shoulder, and Arm, and Ancle, with some old Rum warm'd; and they cut the Hair a little from the back Part of my Head, and wash'd that; for it was eletted with Blood, from

from a pretty long, but not a deep Gash; and put a Family Plaster upon it; for, if this Woman has any good Quality, it is, it seems, in a Readiness and Skill to manage in Cases, where sudden Missortunes

happens in a Family.

After this, I fell into a pretty found and refreshing Sleep, and lay till Twelve o'Clock, tolerably
easy, considering I was very severish, and aguishly
inclin'd; and she took a deal of Care to fit me to
undergo more Trials, which I had hop'd would have
been happily ended: But Providence did not see
fit.

She would make me rife about Twelve; but I was fo weak, I could only fit up till the Bed was made, and went into it again; and was, as they faid, delirious some Part of the Afternoon. But having a tolerable Night on Thursday, I was a good deal better on Friday, and on Saturday got up, and eat a little Spoon-meat, and my-Feverisnness seem'd to be gone; and I was so mended by Evening, that I begg'd her Indulgence in my Closet, to be left to myself; which she consented to, it being doublebarr'd the Day before, and I affuring her, that all my Contrivances, as the call'd them, were at an end. But first she made me tell the whole Story of my Enterprize; which I did very faithfully. knowing now that nothing could fland me in any stead, or contribute to my Safety and Escape: And fhe feem'd full of Wonder at my Resolution; but told me frankly, that I should have found a hard Matter to get quite off; for, that fhe was provided with a Warrant from my Master (who is a Justice of Peace in this County, as well as in the other) to get me apprehended, if I had got away, on Suspicion of wronging him, let me have been where I would.

O how deep-laid are the Mischies designed to fall on my devoted Head!—Surely, surely, I cannot be worthy worthy of all this Contrivance!—This too well shews me the Truth of what was hinted to me formerly at the other House, that my Master swore he would have me! O preserve, me Heaven! from being his, in his own wicked Sense of the Ad-

juration!

I must add, that now this Woman sees me pick up so fast, she uses me worse, and has abridg'd me of Paper all but one Sheet, which I am to shew her, written or unwritten, on Demand: and has reduc'd me to one Pen: yet my hidden Stores stand me in stead. But she is more and more snappish and cross; and tauntingly calls me Mrs. Williams, and any thing she thinks will vex me.

SUNDAY Afternoon.

Airing, for three or four Hours this Afternoon; and I am a good deal better; and should be much more so, if I knew for what I am reserv'd. But Health is a Blessing hardly to be coveted in my Circumstances, since that but exposes me to the Calamity I am in continual Apprehensions of; whereas a weak and sickly State might possibly move Compassion for me. O how I dread the Coming of this angry and incensed Master; tho' I am sure I have done him no Harm!

Just now we heard, that he had like to have been drown'd in crossing the Stream, a few Days ago, in pursuing his Game. What is the Matter, that, with all his ill Usage of me, I cannot hate him? To be sure, I am not like other People! He has certainly done enough to make me hate him; but yet when I heard his Danger, which was very great, I could not in my Heart forbear rejoicing for his Sasety; tho' his Death would have ended my Afflictions. Ungenerous Master! if you knew this, you surely would

would not be so much my Persecutor! But sor my late good Lady's take, I must wish him well; and O what an Angel would he be in my Eyes yet, if he would cease his Attempts, and resorm!

Well, I hear by Mrs. Jewkes; that John Arnold is turn'd away, being detected in writing to Mr. Williams; and that Mr. Longman, and Mr. Jonathan the Butler, have incurr'd his Displeasure, for affering to speak in my Behalf. Mrs. Jervis too is in Danger; for all these three, probably, went together to beg in my Favour; for now it is known where I am.

Mrs. Jewkes, has with the News about my Master, receiv'd a Letter; but she says the Contents are too bad for me to know. They must be bad indeed, if they be worse than what I have already known.

Just now the horrid Creature tells me, as a Secret, that she has Reason to think he has found out a way to satisfy my Scruples: It is, by marrying me to this dreadful Colbrand, and buying me of him on the Wedding day, for a Sum of Money!—Was ever the like heard?—She says it will be my Duty to obey my Husband; and that Mr. Williams will be forc'd, as a Punishment, to marry us; and that when my Master had paid for me, and I am surrender'd up, the Swiss is to go home again, with the Money, to his former Wise and Children; for she says, it is the Custom of those People to have a Wise in every Nation.

But, this, to be fure, is horrid Romancing! Yet abominable as it is, it may possibly serve to introduce some Plot now hatching!—With what strange Perplexities is my poor Mind agitated! Perchance, some Sham-Marriage may be designed on purpose to ruin me: But can a Husband sell his Wise, against her own Consent?—And will such a Bargain stand

good in Law ?

MONDAY, TUESDAY, WEDNESDAY, the 32d, 33d, and 34th Days of my Imprisonment.

TOTHING offers these Days but Squabblings between Mrs. Jewkes and me. She grows worse and worse to me. I vex'd her Yesterday, because she talked nastily; and told her she talked more like a vile London Prostitute, than a Gentleman's Housekeeper; and she thinks she cannot use me bad enough for it. Bleis me! she curses and fforms at me like a Trooper, and can hardly keep her Hands off me. You may believe she must talk fadly to make me fay fuch harsh Words: Indeed it cannot be repeated; as she is a Disgrace to her Sex. And then she ridicules me, and laughs at my Notions of Honesty; and tells me, impudent Creature as the is! what a fine Bedfellow I shall make for my Master (and such-like), with such whimfical Notions about me !- Do you think this is to be borne? And yet she talks worse than this. if possible! Quite filthily! O what vile Hands am I put into!

THURSDAY.

Have now all the Reason that can be, to apprehend my Master will be here soon; for the Servants are busy in setting the House to rights; and a Stable and Coach-house are cleaning out, that have not been used some time. I asked Mrs. Jewkes; but she tells me nothing, nor will hardly answer me when I ask her a Question. Sometimes I think she puts on these strange wicked Airs to me, purposely to make me wish for, what I dread most of all things, my Master's coming down. He talk of Love!—If he had any the least Notion of Regard for me, to be sure he would not give this naughty

240 PAMELA; Or,

Body such Power over me:—And if he does come, where is his Promise of not seeing me without I consent to it? But, it seems, His Honour owes me nothing! So he tells me in his Letter. And why? Because I am willing to keep mine. But, indeed, he says, he hates me perfetly: And it is plain he does or I should not be left to the Mercy of this Woman; and, what is worse, to my wosul Apprehensions.

FRIDAY, the 36th Day of my Imprisonment. Took the Liberty Yesterday Afternoon, finding the Gates open, to walk out before the House; and, ere I was aware, had got to the Bottom of the long Row of Elms; and there I fat myfelf down upon the Steps of a fort of broad Stile, which leads into the Road, and goes towards the Town. And as I fat musing about what always busies my Mind, I saw a whole Body of Folks, running towards me from the House, Men and Women, as in a Fright. At first I wonder'd what was the Matter, till they came nearer; and I found they were all alarm'd, thinking I had attempted to get off. There was first the horrible Colbrand, running with his long Legs, well nigh Two Yards at a Stride; then there was one of the Grooms, poor Mr. Williams's Robber; then I 'fpy'd Nan, half out of Breath, and the Cookmaid after her; and lastly, came waddling, as fast as the could, Mrs. Jewkes exclaiming most bitterly, as I found, against me. Colbrand said, O how have you frighted us all !- And went behind me, left I should run away, as I suppose.

I fat still, to let them see I had no View to get away; for, besides the Improbability of succeeding, my last sad Attempt has cur'd me of enterprising again. And when Mrs. Jewkes came within Hearing, I found I found her terribly incens'd, and raving about my Contrivances. Why, faid I, should you be so concern'd? Here I have fat a few Minutes, and had not the least Thought of getting away, or going farther; but to return as foon as it was duskish. She would not believe me; and the barbarous Creature struck at me with her horrid Fist, and, I believe, would have felled me, had not Colbrand interpofed, and faid, He faw me fitting still, looking about me, and not seeming to have the least Inclination to ftir. But this would not ferve: She order'd the two Maids to take me each by an Arm, and lead me back into the House, and up-stairs; and there have I been lock'd up ever fince, without Shoes. I vain have I pleaded, that I had no Defign, as indeed I had not the least; and last Night, I was forced to lie between her and Nan; and I find she is resolved to make a Handle of this against me, and in her own Behalf .- Indeed, what with her Ufage, and my own Apprehensions of still worse, I am quite weary of my Life.

Just now she has been with me, and given me my Shoes, and has laid her imperious Command upon me, to dress myself in a Suit of Cloaths out of the Portmanteau, which I have not seen lately, against Three or Four o'Clock; for, she says, she is to have a Visit from Lady Darnford's two Daughters, who come purposely to see me; and so she gave me the Key of the Portmanteau. But I will not obey her; and I told her, I would not be made a Shew of, nor see the Ladies. She left me, saying, it should be worse for me, if I did not. But how can that be?

h ded grades elseled first all tool grouppers and enough

Five o'Clock is come.

ND no young Ladies !- So that I fancy-But A hold! I hear their Coach, I believe. I'll step to the Window.-I won't go down to them, I am refolv'd-

Good Sirs! good Sirs! What will become of me! Here is my Mafter come in his fine Chariot !- Indeed he is! What shall I do? Where shall I hide myself?-O! What shall I do? Pray for me! But Oh! you'll not fee this !- Now, good God of Heaven, preserve me! if it is thy blessed Will!

Seven o'Clock.

THO' I dread to fee him, yet do I wonder I have not. To be fure fomething is refolving against me, and he stays to hear all her Stories. I can hardly write; yet, as I can do nothing else, I know not how to forbear !- Yet I cannot hold my Pen-How crooked and trembling the Lines !- I must leave off, till I can get quieter Fingers !- Why should the Guiltless tremble so, when the Guilty can possess their Minds in Peace?

SATURDAY Morning.

JOW let me give you an Account of what passed last Night; for I had no Power to write, nor yet Opportunity, till now.

This vile Woman held my Master till half an Hour after Seven; and he came hither about Five in the Afternoon. And then I heard his Voice on the Stairs, as he was coming up to me. It was about his Supper; for he faid, I shall chuse a boil'd Chicken with Butter and Parsley.—And up he came.

He put on a stern and majestic Air; and he can look very majestic when he pleases. Well, perverse Pamela, ungrateful Runaway, faid he, for my first Salutation !- You do well, don't you, to give me all this Trouble and Vexation! I could not speak; but throwing myself on the Floor, hid my Face, and was ready to die with Grief and Apprehension. He faid, Well may you hide your Face! well may you be asham'd to see me, vile Forward one, as you are !- I fobb'd, and wept, but could not speak. And he let me lie, and went to the Door, and called Mrs. Tewkes .- There, faid he, take up that fallen Angel!-Once I thought her as innocent as an Angel of Light: But I have now no Patience with her, The little Hypocrite prostrates herself thus, in . hopes to move my Weakness in her Favour, and that I'll raise her from the Floor myself. But I shall not touch her: No, faid he, cruel Gentleman, as he was! let fuch Fellows as Williams be taken in by her artful Wiles! I know her now, and fee the is for any Fool's Turn, that will be caught by her.

I fighed, as if my Heart would break!—And Mrs. Fewkes lifted me up upon my Knees; for I trembled fo, I could not stand. Come, said she, Mrs. Pamela, learn to know your best Friend ! confefs your unworthy Behaviour, and beg his Honour's Forgiveness of all your Faults. I was ready to faint; and he faid, She is Mistress of Arts, I'll assure you: and will mimic a Fit, ten to one in a Minute.

I was flruck to the Heart at this; but could not fpeak presently; only lifted up my Eyes to Heaven! -And at last made shift to say-God forgive you, Sir!—He seemed in a great Passion, and walked up and down the Room, casting sometimes an Eye upon me, and feeming as if he would have spoken, but check'd himself-And at last he said, When she has afted this her First Part, over, perhaps I will see

M 2

her again, and she shall foon know what she has to

And so he went out of the Room: And I was quite sick at Heart!—Surely, said I, I am the wickedest Creature that ever breath'd! Well, said the Impertinent, not so wicked as that neither; but I am glad you begin to see your Faults. Nothing like being humble!—Come, I'll stand your Friend, and plead for you, if you'll promise to be more dutiful for the suture: Come, come, added the Wretch, this may be all made up by To-morrow Morning, if you are not a Fool.—Be gone, hideous Woman! taid I, and let not my Assistances be added to by thy inexorable Cruelty, and unwomanly Wickedness.

She gave me a Push, and went away in a violent Passion. And it seems, she made a Story of this; and said, I had such a Spirit, there was no bearing it.

I laid me down on the Floor, and had no Power to stir, till the Clock struck Nine; and then the wicked Woman came up again. You must come down-stairs, said she, to my Master; that is, if you please, Spirit!—Said I, I believe I cannot stand. Then, said she, I'll send Mons. Colbrand to carry you down.

I got up, as well as I could, and trembled all the Way down-stairs: And she went before me into the Parlour; and a new Servant, that he had waiting on him, instead of John, withdrew as soon as I came in: And, by the way, he had a new Coachman too; which looked as if Bedfordshire Robin was turn'd away.

I thought, faid he, when I came down, you should have sat at Table with me, when I had not Company; but when I find you cannot forget your Original, but must prefer my Menials to me, I call you down to wait on me while I sup, that I may have some Talk with you, and throw away as little Time as possible upon you.

Sir, said I, you do me Honour to wait upon you:

—And I never shall; I hope, forget my Original.

But I was forced to stand behind his Chair, that I might hold by it. Fill me, said he, a Glass of that Burgundy. I went to do it; but my Hand shook so, that I could not hold the Plate with the Glass in it, and spilt some of the Wine. So Mrs. Fewker, pour'd it for me, and carried it as well as I could; and made a low Curt'sy. He took it, and said,

Stand behind me, out of my Sight!

Why, Mrs. Jewkes, said he, you tell me, she remains very sullen still, and eats nothing. No, said she, not so much as will keep Life and Soul together.—And is always crying, you say, too? Yes, Sir, answer'd she, I think she is, for one thing or another. Ay, said he, your young Wenches will feed upon their Tears; and their Obstinacy will serve them for Meat and Drink. I think I never saw her look better, though, in my Life!—But, I suppose, she lives upon Love. This sweet Mr. Williams, and her little villainous Plots together, have kept her alive and well, to be sure: For Mischief, Love, and Contradiction, are the natural Aliments of a Woman.

Poor I was forced to hear all this, and be filent;

and indeed my Heart was too full to fpeak.

And so you say, said he, that she had another Project, but Yesterday, to get away? She denies it herself, said she; but it had all the Appearance of one. I'm sure she made me in a fearful Pucker about it: And I am glad your Honour is come, with all my Heart; and I hope, whatever be your Honour's Intention concerning her, you will not be long about it; for you'll find her as slippery as an Eel, I'll assure you.

Sir, faid I, and class'd his Knees with my Arms, not knowing what I did, and falling on my Knees,

wicked Woman's Usage of me.—
He cruelly interrupted me, and said, I am satisfy'd she has done her Duty: It signifies nothing what you say against Mrs. Jewkes. That you are here, little Hypocrite as you are, pleading your Cause before me, is owing to her Care of you; else you had been with the Parson.—Wicked Girl! said he, to tempt a Man to undo himself, as you have done him, at a Time I was on the Point of making him happy for his Life!

I rose; but said with a deep Sigh, I have done, Sir!—I have done!—I have a strange Tribunal to plead before. The poor Sheep, in the Fable, had such an one; when it was try'd before the Vulture,

on the Accusation of the Wolf!

So, Mrs. Jewkes, said he, you are the Wolf, I the Vulture, and this the poor innocent Lamb on her Trial before us—Oh! you don't know how well this Innocent is read in Reslection. She has Wit at Will, when she has a mind to display her own romantic Innocence, at the Price of other People's Character.

Well, said the aggravating Creature, this is nothing to what she has called me; I have been a Jezebel, a London Prostitute, and what not?—But I am contented with her ill Names, now I see it is her Fashion, and she can call your Honour a Vulture.

Said I, I had no Thought of comparing my Mafter—And was going to fay on: But he faid, Don't prate, Girl!—No, faid she, it don't become you, I am sure.

Well, said I, since I must not speak, I will hold my Peace; but there is a righteous Judge, who knows the Secrets of all Hearts; and to Him I appeal.

See there! faid he: Now this meek, good Creature is praying for Fire from Heaven upon us! O

The can curse most heartily, in the Spirit of Chri-Itian Meeknefs, I'll affure you !- Come, Saucy-face, give me another Glass of Wine.

So I did, as well as I could; but wept fo, that he faid, I suppose I shall have some of your Tears in my Wine!

When he had supp'd, he stood up, and said, O how stappy for you it is, that you can, at Will, make your speaking Eyes overflow in this manner, without lofing any of their Brilliancy! You have been told, I suppose, that you are most beautiful in your I ears !- Did you ever, faid he to her (who all this while was standing in one Corner of the Parlour), fee a more charming Creature than this? Is it to be wonder'd at, that I demean myself thus to take notice of her?—See, faid he, and took the Glass with one Hand, and turn'd me round with the other, what a Shape! what a Neck! what a Hand! and what a Bloom on that lovely Face! -But who can describe the Tricks and Artifices, that lie lurking in her little, plotting, guileful Heart! 'Tis no Wonder the poor Parson was infatuated with her. I blame him less than I do her; for who could expect fuch Artifice in to young a Sorceres? The same and the same

I went to the farther Part of the Room, and held my Face against the Waistcoat; and in spite of all I could do to refrain crying, fobb'd, as if my Heart would break. He said, I am surpris'd, Mrs. Fewkes at the Mistake of the Letters you tell me of! But, you fee, I am not afraid any-body should read what I write. I don't carry on private Correspondencies, and reveal every Secret that comes to my Knowlege, and then corrupt People to carry my Letters against their Duty, and all good Conscience.

Come hither, Hully aid he: You and I have a dreadful Reckonin o make.-Why don't you MA come. come, when I bid you !- Fie upon it, Mrs. Pamela, faid the, What I not stir, when his Honour commands you to come to him !-- Who knows but his

Goodness will forgive you?

He came to me (for I had no Power to ffir), and put his Arm about my Neck, and would kifs me; and faid, Well, Mrs. Fewkes, if it were not for the Thought of this curled Parson, I believe in my Heart, so great is my Weakness, that I could yet forgive this intriguing little Slut, and take her to my Bosom.

O, faid the Sycophant, you are very good, Sir, very forgiving, indeed !- But come, added the profligate Wretch, I hope you will be so good, as to take her to your Bosom; and that, by To-morrow Morning, you'll bring her to a better Sense of

her Duty!

Could any-thing in Womanhood, be so vile? I had no Patience: But yet Grief and Indignation choaked up the Passage of my Words; and I could only stammer out a passionate Exclamation to Heaven, to protect my Innocence. But the Word was the Subject of their Ridicule. Was ever poor

Creature worfe befet ! 150 1500 15

He faid, as if he had been confidering whether he could forgive me or not, No, I cannot yet forgive her neither. - She has given me great Disturbance; has brought great Discredit upon me, both abroad and at home; has corrupted all my Servants at the other House; has despised my honourable Views and Intentions to her, and fought to run away with this ungrateful Parson. And surely I ought not to forgive all this !- Yet, with all this wretched Grimace, he kiffed me again, and would have put his Hand into my Bosom; but I struggled, and said, I would die before I would be used thus. Consider, Pamela, said he, in a threatning Tone, confider If you do, a more dreadful Fate awaits you than you expect. But, take her up stairs Mrs. Jewkes, and I'll fend a few Lines to her to consider of; and let me have your Answer, Panula, in the Morning. Till then you have to resolve: And after that your Dooms is fix'd—So I went up stairs, and gave myself up to Grief, and Expectation of what he would send: But yet I was glad of this Night's Reprieve!

He sent me, however, nothing at all. And about Twelve o'Clock, Mrs. Jewkes and Non came up, as the Night before, to be my Bedsellows; and I would go to bed with some of my Cloaths on which they muttered at sadly; and Mrs. Jewkes rail'd at me particularly: Indeed I would have satup all Night, for sear, if she would have let me. I've I had but very little Rest that Night, apprehending this Woman would let my Master im. She did nothing but praise him, and blame me; but I answer'd her as little as I could.

He has Sir Simon Tell-tale, alias Darnford, to dine with him To-day, whose Family sent to welcome him into the Country; and it seems, the old Knight wants to see me; so I suppose I shall be sent for, as Samson was, to make Sport for him——Here Lam, and must bear it alk!

Twelve of Clock, SATURDAY Noon.

JUST now he has sent me up, by Mrs. Jewkes, the following Proposals. So here are the honourable Intentions all at once laid open. They are, my dear Parents, to make me a vile kept Mistress: Which, I hope, I shall always detest the Thoughts of. But you'll see how they are accommodated.

modated to what I should have most desired, could I have honeftly promoted it, your Welfare and Happiness. I have answer'd them, as I am sure you'll approve; and I am prepar'd for the worst: For tho' I fear there will be nothing omitted to ruin me. and tho' my poor Strength will not be able to defend me, yet I will be innocent of Crime in my Intention, and in the fight of God; and to Him leave the avenging of all my Wrongs, in his own good Time and Manner. I shall write to you my Anfwer against his Articles; and hope the best, tho' I fear the worst. But if I should come home to you ruin'd and undone, and may not be able to look you in the Face; yet pity and inspirit the poor Pamela, to make her little Remnant of Life easy; for long I shall not survive my Disgrace: And you may be affured it shall not be my Fault, if it be my Misfortune. All says that state one had sent too

and botheld our sub-boson control of class one gold To Mrs. PAMELA This is my ANSWER. · ANDREWS.

· I.

· The following ARTI-

+ CLES, are proposed to your serious Consi-

deration; and let me

bave an Answer, in

· Writing, to them;

that I may take my

· Resolutions accord-

e ingly. Only remem-

ber, that I will not

be trifled with; and

· what you give for An-

· jwer, will absolutely

decide your Fate,

without Exposulation,

a or further Trouble;

Forgive, Sir, the Spirit your poor Servant is about to shew in her Answer to your AR-TICLES. Not to be warm, and in earnest, on such an Occasion as the present, would shew a Degree of Guilt, that, I hope, my Soul abhors. I will not trifle with you, nor alt like a Perfon doubtjut of her own Mind; for it wants not one Moment's Confideration with me; and I

there-

therefore return the Answer following, let what will be the Consequence:

I. I F you can convince ted Parson has had no be ted Parson has had no hove me (that I may not deserve, in your Opinion, the opprobrious Terms of and that you have no farward and artful, and such like) to declare so lemnly, that Mr. Williams never had the least Encouragement from me, as to what you hint; and I believe his principal

the rather I willing that

Tiplicano en entre the

Santal Stanta Service

tall content to be two

Parts of its and the cont

ceince for the Margare

off of phiwo of Livour

rook were to be from your

Description (Party and III.

... On the distance of

exited their vote freshort

THE CHARLEST LOSSES SILE

- Many Mar Line De Constante

materials south water

11000

rise Complication of the second

Marie Carden War God

white water watering

S to the first Arti-Licle, Sir, it may bedeserve, in your Opinion, the opprobrious Terms of forward and artful, and fuch like) to declare folemnly, that Mr. Williams never had the least Encouragement from me, as to what you hint; and I believe his principal Motion was the apprehended Duty of his Fanction, quite contrary to his apparent Interest, to affift a Person he thought in Diftress. You may, Sir, the rather believe me, when I declare, that I know not the Man breathing I would wish to marry; and that the only one I could honour more than another, is the Gentleman, who, of all others, feeks my everlasting Dishonour.

II. I will directly
make you a Present of
500 Guineas, for your

· own

II. As to your fecond Proposal, let the Consequence be what it will, I reject own Use, which you may dispose of to any Purpose you please:
And will give it absolutely into the Hands of any Person you shall appoint to receive it; and expect no Favour in Return, till you are satisfy'd in the Posses.

reject it with all my Soul. Money, Sir, is not my chief Good: May God Almighty defert me, whenever it is; and whenever, for the fake of that, I can give up my Title to that bleffed Hope which will fland me in flead, at a time when Millions of Gold will not purchase one happy Moment of Reflection on a past mis-spent Life!

· III. I will likewife directly make over to you a Purchase I lately made in Kent, which brings in 2501. per Annum, clear of all Dedudions. This shall be made over to you in full · Property for your Life, and for the Lives of any Children to Perpetuity, that you may happen to have: And your Father shall be immediately put into Possession of it in Trust for these · Purposes: And the Maa nagement of it will a comfortable vield. Subfistence to him. and your Mother, for Life; and I will make up

III. Your Third Propofal, Sir, I reject for the same Reason; and am forry you could think my poor honest Parents would enter into their Part of it, and be concerned for the Management of an Estate, which would be owing to the Prostitution of their poor Daughter. Forgive, Sir. my Warmth on this Occafion; but you know not the poor Man, and the poor Woman, my ever-dear Father and Mcther, if you think, that they would not much rather choose to starve in a Ditch, or rot in a noifome Dungeon, than ac-

whoch is and washing to

-milk stone and hadroni

valuably and tending at

vour Estate.

ran la colification IV. I will, moreover, extend my Favour to any other of vour Relations, that you may think worthy of it, or that are valued 6 by you.

sonalimed Reported world rend of the research

V. I will, befides, order Patterns to be fent

vou for choosing Four

complete Suits of rich Cloaths, that you may appear with Reputation as if you were my Wife. And I will give you the · Two Diamond Rings, and Two Pair of Earrings, and Diamond Necklace, that were

6 bought

up any Deficiences, if cept of the Fortune of fuch should happen to a Monarch, upon such that clear Sum, and al- wicked Terms. I dare low him 50 l. per An- not fay all that my full num belides, for his Mind suggests to me on Life, and that of your this grievous Occasion-Mother, for his Care But indeed, Sir, you know and Management of this them not; nor shall the Terrors of Death, in its most frightful Forms, I need not cream it was needed hope, thro' God's affifting Grace, ever make me act unworthy of fuch poor honest Parents!

> IV. Your Fourth Proposal, Itake upon me, Sir, to answer as the Third. If I have any Friends that want the Favour of the Great, may they ever want it, if they are capable of defiring it on unworthy Terms !

was recommended and only V. Fine Cloaths, Sir. become not me; nor have I any Ambition to wear them. I have greater Pride in my Poverty and Meanness, than I should have in Dress and Finery. Believe me, Sir, I think fuch things less become the humble-born Pamela than the Rags your good Mother raised me from. Your

PAMELA; Or, 254

her and me had been me: And to lose the best • And I will confer upon vou still other Gratuities, as I shall find myfelf obliged, by your

good Behaviour and

randidayo anno dii da

is the country of the country of A Chair Contract Property

4 Affection.

bought by my Mother, Your Rings, Sir, your to present to Miss Tom- Necklace, and your Earlins, if the Match that rings, will better befit was proposed between Ladies of Degree, than brought to Effect: Jewel, my Virtue, would be poorly recompensed by those you propose to give me. What should I think, when I looked upon my Finger, or faw, in the Glass those Diamonds on my Neck, and in my Ears, but that they were the Price of my Honesty; and that I wore those Jewels outwardly, because I had none inwardly have a second

VI. Now Pamela, will you fee by this, what a Value I fet upon the Free-will of a · Person already in my · Power; and who, if these Proposals are not accepted, shall find, that I have not taken s all these Pains, and rifqued my Reputation, as I have done, without · refolving to gratify my · Passion for you, at all · Adventures; and if you · refuse, without making any Terms at all.

· VII.

VI. I know, Sir, by woful Experience, that I am in your Power: 1 know all the Relistance I can make will be poor and weak, and perhaps stand me in little stead : I dread your Will to ruin me is as great as your Power: Yet, Sir, will I dare to tell you, that I will make no Free-will Offering of my Virtue. All that I can do, poor as it is, I will do, to convince you, that your Offers shall have no Part in my my Choice; and if I cannot escape the Violence of Man, I hope, by God's Grace, I shall have nothing to reproach myfelf, for not doing all in my Power to avoid my Difgrace; and then I can fafely appeal to the great God, my only Refuge and Protector, with this Confolation, That my Wil bore no Part in the Violation.

VII. You shall be · Miltress of my Person and Fortune, as much as if the foolish Ceremoney had passed. All my Servants shall be · yours; and you shall choose any two Persons to attend yourfelf, either Male or Female, without any Controul of mine; and if your · Conduct be fuch, that I have Reason to be satisfied with it, I know 4 not (but will not engage for this), that I may after a Twelve-6 month's Cohabitation, marry you; for if my · Love increases for you, as it has done for many

" Months

Market matter than the continues

· rest Pathon to Path

More allies to the last

bin 1991 A name 4 Africasion

the state of the southed

with the wind the second of th

MAN SUR T SIN IT COMME

and probation make the say

Additional about the diagram

the bloth there is not

THE PHILL CHAINS THE BEILDING

LEADER FOR A THE SERVER

VII. I have not once dared to look fo high, as to fuch a Propofal as your Seventh Article contains. Hence have proceeded all my little abortive Artifices to escape from the Confinement you have put me in; altho' you promised to be honourable to me. Your Honour well I know, would not let you floop to fo mean and fo unworthy a Slave, as the poor Pamela: All I delire is, to be permitted to return to my native Meanness unviolated. What have I done, Sir, to deserve it. should be otherwise? For the obtaining of this, though

256 PAMELA; Or,

Months past, it will be impossible for me to

deny you any thing.

· And now, Pamela,

consider well, it is

in your Power to oblige me on such

Terms, as will make

yourfelf, and all your

· Friends, happy : But

this will be over this

very Day, irrevoca-

bly over; and you

'shall find all you

would be thought to

fear, without the

least Benefit arising from it to yourself.

And I beg you'll

well weigh the Mat-

ter, and comply with

· my Proposals; and

I will inflantly for

I will instantly fet about fecuring to

vou the full Effect

of them; And let

me, if you value

s yourself, experience

a grateful Return on

this Occasion, and

· I'll forgive all that's

paft." Il svaling

though I would not have marry'd your Chaplain, yet would I have run away with your meanest Servant, if I had thought I could have got fafe to my beloved Poverty. I heard you once fay, Sir, That a certain great Commander, who could live upon Lentils, might well refuse the Bribes of the greatest Monarch: And I hope, as I can contentedly live at the meanest Rate, and think not myfelf above the lowest Conditions that I am also above making an Exchange of my Honesty for all the Riches of the Indies. When I come to be proud and vain of gaudy Apparel, and outlide Finery; then (which I hope will never be may I rest my principal Good in fuch vain. Trinkets, and despise for them the more folid Ornaments of a good Fame, and a Chaftity inviolate.

Give me Leave to fay, Sir, in Answer to what you hint, That you may, in a Twelvemonth's time, marry me, on the Continuance of my good Behaviour;

viour; that this weighs less with me, if possible, than any thing else you have said: For, in the first place, there is an Endos all Merit, and all good Behaviour, on my Side, if I have now any, the Moment I consent to your proposals: And I should be so far from expecting such an Honour, that I will pronounce, that I should be most unworthy of it. What, Sir, would the World say, were you to marry your Harlot?—That a Gentleman of your Rank in Life should stoop, not only to the base-born Pamela, but to a base-born Prostitute?—Little, Sir, as I know of the World, I am not to be caught

by a Bait fo poorly cover'd as this!

Yet, after all, dreadful is the Thought, that-I, a poor, weak, friendless, unhappy Creature, am too fully in your Power! But permit me, Sir, to pray, as I now write on my bended Knees, That before you resolve upon my Ruin, you will weigh well the Matter. Hitherto, Sir, tho' you have taken large Strides to this crying Sin, yet are you on this Sid: the Commission of it. --- When once it is done, nothing can recall it! And where will be your Triumph?---What Glory will be the Spoils of fuch a weak Enemy yield you? Let me but enjoy my Poverty with Honesty, is all my Prayer; and I will bless you, and pray for you, every Moment of my Life! Think, O think! before it is yet too late? what Stings, what Remorfe will attend your dying Hour, when you come to reflect, that you have ruined, perhaps Soul and Body, a wretched Creature, whose only Pride was her Virtue! And how pleased you will be, on the Contrary, if on that tremendous Moment you shall be able to acquit yourfelf of this foul Crime, and to plead in your own Behalf, that you suffered the earnest Supplications of an unhappy Wretch to prevail with you to be innocent yourself, and let her remain so !- May God Almighty,

Almighty, whose Mercy so lately sav'd you from the Peril of perishing in deep Waters (on which I hope, you will give me Cause to congratulate you!) touch your Heart in my Favour, and save you from this Sin, and me from this Ruin!—And to Him do I commit my Cause; and to him will I give the Glory, and Night and Day pray for you, if I may be permitted to escape this great Evil!—

Your poor oppressed,

broken Spirited Servant.

I took a Copy of this for your Perusal, my dear Parents, if I shall ever be so happy to see you again (for I hope my Conduct will be approved of by you); and at Night, when Sir Simon was gone, he sent for me down. Well, said he, have you considered my Proposals? Yes, Sir, said I, I have: And there is my Answer: But pray let me not see you read it. It is your Bashfulness said he, or your Obstinacy, that makes you not choose I should read it be-

fore you?

I offered to go away; and he said, Don't run from me; I won't read it till you are gone. But, said he, tell me Pamela, whether you comply with my Proposals, or not? Sir, said I, you will see presently; pray don't hold me; for he took my Hand. Said he, Did you well consider, before you answer'd?—I did, Sir, said I. If it be not what you think will please me, said he, dear Girl, take it back again, and reconsider it; for if I have this as your absolute Answer, and I don't like it, you are undone; for I will not sue meanly, where I can command. I fear, said he, it is not what I like, by your Manner: and let me tell you, that I cannot bear Denial. If the Terms I have offered are not sufficient, I will augment them to Two-thirds of

my Estate; for, said he, and swore a dreadful Oath, I cannot live without you: And, since the Thing is gone so far, I will not! And so he clasped me in his Arms, in such a manner as quite frighted me; and kissed me two or three times.

I got from him, and ran up-stairs, and went to

the Closet, and was quite uneasy and fearful.

In an Hour's time he called Mrs. Fewkes down to him! And I heard him very high in Passion: And all about poor me! And I heard her say, It was his own Fault; there would be an End of all my Complaining and Perverseness, if he was once resolved; and other most impudent Aggravations. I am resolved not to go to-bed this Night, if I can help it!—Lie still, lie still, my poor sluttering Heart!—What will become of me!

Almost Twelve o'Clock, SATURDAY Night.

E sent Mrs. Jewkes, about ten o'Clock, to tell me to come to him. Where? said I. I'll shew you, said she. I went down three or four Steps, and saw her making to his Chamber, the Door of which was open: So I said, I cannot go there!—Don't be foolish, said she; but come; no Harm-will be done to you!—Well, said I, if I die, I cannot go there. I heard him say, Let her come, or it shall be worse for her. I can't bear, said he, to speak to her myself!—Well, said I, I cannot come, indeed I cannot; and so I went up again into my Closet, expecting to be setched by Force.

But she came up soon after, and bid me make haste to-bed: Said I, I will not go to bed this Night, that's certain!—Then, said she, you shall be made to come to-bed; and Nan and I will undress you. I knew neither Prayers nor Tears would move this

- (111)

wicked

wicked Woman: So I faid, I am fure you will let my Master in, and I shall be undone! Mighty Piece of Undone! she said: But he was too exasperated against me, to be so familiar with me, she would affure me!—Ay, faid the, you'll be disposed of another way soon, I can tell you for your comfort: and I hope your Husband will have your Obedience, tho' nobody else can have it. No Husband in the World, said I, shall make me do an unjust or base thing.—She faid, That would be foon tried; and Nan coming in, What! faid I, am I to have Two Bedfellows again, these warm Nights? Yes, said she, Slippery-one, you are, till you can have One good one inflead of us. Said I, Mrs. Jewkes, don't talk nastily to me. I see you are beginning again; and I shall affront you may be; for next to bad Actions, are bad Words; for they could not be spoken, if they were not in the Heart-Come to-bed, Purity! faid she. You are a Nonfuch, I suppose. Indeed, faid I, I can't come to-bed; and it will do you no Harm to let me stay all Night in the great Chair, Nan, said she, undress my young Lady. If she won't let you, I'll help you; and, if neither of us can do it quietly, we'll call my Master to do it for us; tho', faid she, I think it an Office worthier of Monsieur Colbrand !- you are very wicked, said I. I know it, said she : I am a fezebet, and a London Prostitute, you know. You did great Feats, faid I, to tell my Master all this poor Stuff! But you did not tell him how you beat me. No. Lambkin, faid she (a Word I had not heard a good while), that I left for you to tell; and you was going to do it, if the Vulture had not taken the Wolf's Part, and bid the poor innocent Lamb be filent!—Ay, faid I, no matter for your Fleers, Mrs. Jewkes; tho' I can have neither Justice nor Mercy here, and cannot he heard in my Defence, yet a Time will come, may-be, when I shall be heard, and when your own Guilt will strike you dumb-Ay! Spirit! said she! and the Vulture too! Must we both be dumb? Why that, Lambkin, will be pretty !- Then, faid the wicked one, you'll have all the Talk to yourfelf!-Then how will the Tongue of the pretty Lambkin bleat out Innocence, and Virtue, and Honefly, till the whole Tryal be at an End!-You're a wicked Woman, that's certain, faid I; and if you thought any thing of another World, could not talk thus. But no Wonder !- It shews what Hands I'm got into!-Ay, fo it does, faid fhe; but I beg you'll undress, and come to-bed, or I believe your innocence won't keep you from still worse Hands. will come to-bed, faid I, if you will let me have the Keys in my own Hand; not elfe, If I can help it. Yes, faid the, and then, hey for another Contrivance, another Escape!-No, no, said I, all my Contrivances are over, I'll affure you! Pray let me have the Keys, and I will come to-bed. She came to me, and took me in her huge Arms, as if I was a Feather: Said she, I do this to shew you, what a poor Refistance you can make against me, if I please to exert myfelf; and fo Lambkin, don't fay to your Wolf, I won't come to bed! - And fet me down, and tapped me on the Neck: Ah! faid she, thou art a pretty Creature, it's true; but so obstinate! fo full of Spirit! if thy Strength was but answerable to that, thou would'ft run away with us all, and this great House too on thy Back !- But undress, undress, I tell you.

Well, faid I, I see my Missortunes make you very merry, and very witty too: But I will have you, if you will humour me with the Keys of the Chamber-doors.—Are you fure you will love me? faid she: Now speak your Conscience!—Why, said I, you must not put it so close; neither would you,

bak

if you thought you had not given reason to doubt it !- But I will love you as well as I can !- I would not tell a wilful Lye: And if I did, you would not believe me, after your hard Usage of me. Well, faid she, that's all fair, I own !- But Nan, pray pull off my young Lady's Shoes and Stockens. No, pray don't, faid I; I will come to-bed presently, fince I must.

And so I went to the Closet, and scribbled a little about this idle Chit-Chat. And she being importunate, I was forced to go to-bed; but with some of my Cloaths on, as the former Night; and she let me hold the two Keys; for there are two Locks, there being a double Docr; and so I got a little Sleep that Night, having had none for two or three Nights before.

I can't imagine what she means; but Nan offered to talk a little once or twice; and she snubb'd her, and said, I charge you, Wench, don't open your Lips before me; and if you are asked any Questions by Mrs. Pamela, don't answer her one Word, while I am here!—But she is a lordly Woman to the Maid Servants; and that has always been her Character; O how unlike good Mrs. Jervis in every thing! blink to the looke the selection because bhis

SUNDAY Morning.

Thought came into my Head; I meant no Harm; but it was a little bold. For, feeing my Master dreffing to go to Church; and his Chariot getting ready, I went to my Closet, and I writ,

The Prayers of this Congregation are earnefly defired for a Gentleman of great Worth and Honour, who labours under a Temptation to exert his great Power to ruin a poor, distressed, worthless Maiden.

And

The Prayers of this Congregation are earnefly defired, by a toor distressed Creature, for the Preservation of her Virtus and Innocence.

Mrs. Jewkes came up: Always writing! faid she! and would see it: And strait, all that ever I could say, carry'd it down to my Master.—He looked upon it, and said, Tell her, she shall soon see how her Prayers are answer'd. She is very bold: But as she has rejected all my Favours, her Reckoning for all is not far off. I looked after him out of the Window; and he was charmingly dressed: To be sure, he is a handsome sine Gentleman!—What Pity his Heart is not as good as his Appearance! Why can't I hate him?—But don't be uneasy, if you should see this; for it is impossible I should love him; for his Vices all ugly him over, as I may say.

My Master sends word, that he shall not come home to Dinner: I suppose he dines with this Sir Simon Darnford. I aim much concerned for poor Mr. Williams. Mrs. Jewkes fays, he is confin'd still. and takes on much. All his Trouble is brought upon him for my fake: This grieves me much. My Master, it seems, will have his Money from him: This is very hard; for it is three Fifty Pounds, he gave him, as he thought, as a Salary for three Years that he has been with him: But there was no Agreement between them; and he absolutely depended on my Master's Favour. To be sure, it was the more generous of him to run these Risques for the fake of oppressed Innocence: And I hope he will meet with his Reward in due Time. Alas for me! I dare not plead for him; that would raise my Oppressor's Jealousy more. And I have not Interest to save myself!

RS. Jewkes has received a Line from my Mafler, I wonder what it is; for his Chariot is
come home without him. But she will tell me nothing; so it is in vain to ask her. I am so fearful
of Plots and Tricks, I know not what to do!—
Every thing I suspect; for now my Disgrace is
avowed, what can I think!—To be sure, the worst
will be attempted! I can only pour out my Soul in
Prayer to God, for his blessed Protection. But, if
I must suffer, let me not be long a mournful Survivor!—Only let me not shorten my own Time sinfully!—

This Woman left upon the Table, in the Chamber, this Letter of my Master's to her: and I bolted myself in, till I had transcribed it; you'll see how tremblingly, by the Lines. I wish poor Mr. Williams's Release at any Rate; but this Letter makes my Heart ake. Yet I have another Day's

Reprieve, thank God!

Mrs. JEWKES,

Have been so pressed on Williams's Affair, that I shall set out this Afternoon, in Sir Simon's Chariot, and with Parson Poters, who is his Intercession, for Stamford; and shall not be back till Tomorrow Evening, if then. As to your Ward, I am thoroughly incensed against her: She has withstood her Time; and now, would she sign and seal to my Articles, it is too late. I shall discover something, perhaps, by him; and will, on my Return, let her know, that all her ensnaring Loveliness shall not save her from the Fate that awaits her. But let her know nothing of this, less it put

her fruitful Mind upon Plots and Artifices. Befure trust her not without another with you at Night Night, lest she venture the Window in her foolish

Rashness: For I shall require her at your Hands.

THE E D A T WALL

Yours, &c.'

I had but just finished taking a Copy of this, and laid the Letter where I had it, and unbolted the Door, when she came up in a great Fright, for fear I should have seen it; but I being in my Closet, and that lying as she left it; she did not mistrust. O, faid she, I was afraid you had seen my Master's Letter, here, which I carelesty left on the Table. I wish, said I, I had known that. Why fure, said she, if you had, you would not have offer'd to read my Letters! Indeed, faid I, I should, at this time, if it had been in my way: - Do, let me fee it .- Well, faid she, I wish poor Mr. Williams well off: I understand my Master is gone to make up Matters with him; which is very good. To be fure, added she, he is a very good Gentleman, and very forgiving !- Why, faid I, as if I had known nothing of the Matter, how can he make up Matters with him? Is not Mr. Williams at Stamford? Yes, faid she, I believe so; but Parson Peters pleads for him, and he is gone with him to Stamford, and will not be back To-night: So, we have nothing to do, but to eat our Suppers betimes, and go to-bed. Ay, that's pure faid I; and I shall have good Rest this Night, I hope. So, said she, you might every Night, but for your own idle Fears. You are afraid of your Friends, when none are near you. Ay, that's true, faid I; for I have not one near me.

So have I one more good honest Night before me: What the next may be, I know not; and so I'll try to take in a good deal of Sleep, while I can be a little eay. Therefore here I say; Good Night my dear Parents; for I have no more to write about the Vol. I. Night's

Night: And tho' his Letter shocks me, yet I will be as brisk as I can, that she mayn't suspect I have seen it.

TUESDAY Night.

To R the future, I will always mistrust most, when Appearances look fairest. O your poor Daughter! what has she not suffer'd since what I wrote of Sunday Night!—My worst Trial, and my searfullest Danger! O how I shudder to write you an Account of this wicked Interval of Time! For, my dear Parents, will you not be too much frighten'd and affected with my Distress, when I tell you, that his Journey to Stamford was all abominable Pretence? for he came home privately, and had well nigh affected all his vile Purposes, and the Ruin of your poor Daughter; and that by such a Plot as I was not in the least apprehensive of: And Oh! you'll hear what a vile and unwomanly Part that wicked Wretch, Mrs. Tewkes, acted in it!

Wretch, Mrs. Jewkes, acted in it!
I left off with letting you know how much I was pleased, that I had one Night's Reprieve added to my Honesty. But I had less Occasion to rejoice than ever, as you will judge, by what I have said already. Take, then, the dreadful Story, as well

as I can relate it.

The Maid Nan is a little apt to drink, if she can get at Diquor; and Mrs. Jewkes happen'd, or defign'd as is too probable, to leave a Bottle of Cherry-brandy in her way, and the Wench drank some of it more than she should; and when she came in to lay the Cloth, Mrs. Jewkes perceiv'd it, and fell a rating at her most sadly; for she has too many Faults of her own, to suffer any of the like fort in any-body else, if she can help it; and she bid her get out of her Sight, when we had supp'd, and go to bed, to sleep off her Liquor, before we

came to-bed. And so the poor Maid went mutter-

ing up-stairs.

About two Hours after, which was near Eleven o'Clock, Mrs. Jewkes and I went up to go to-bed; I pleasing myself with what a charming Night I should have. We lock'd both Doors, and saw poor Nan, as I thought (but, Oh! 'twas my abominable Master, as you shall hear by-and by), sitting fast asleep, in an Elbow-Chair, in a dark Corner of the Room, with her Apron thrown over her Head and Neck. And Mrs. Jewkes said, there is that Beast of a Wench sast asleep, instead of being a-bed! I knew, said she, she had taken a fine Dose. I'll wake her, said I. No, don't, said she; let her sleep on; we shall lie better without her. Ay, said I, so we shall; but won't she get Cold?

Said she, I hope you have no Writing To-night. No, reply'd I, I will go to-bed with you, Mrs. Fewkes. Said she, I wonder what you can find to write about so much! and am sure you have better Conveniencies of that kind, and more Paper than I am aware of; and I had intended to rummage you, if my Master had not come down; for I spy'd a broken Tea-cup with Ink, which gave me Suspicion; but as he is come, let him look after you, if he will; and if you deceive him, it will be his own Fault.

All this time we were undressing ourselves. And I setch'd a deep Sigh! What do you sigh for? said she. I am thinking, Mrs. Jewkes, answer'd I, what a sad Life I live, and how hard is my Lot. I am sure, the Thief that has robb'd is much better off than I, 'bating the Guilt; and I should, I think take it for a Mercy, to be hang'd out of the way, rather than live in these cruel Apprehensions. So, being not sleepy, and in a prattling Vein, I began to give a little History of myself, as I did, once before, to Mrs. Jervis; in this manner:

N 2

Here,

Here, said I, were my poor honest Parents; they took care to instil good Principles into my Mind, till I was almost twelve Years of Age; and taught me to prefer Goodness and Poverty to the highest Condition of Life; and they confirm d their Lessons by their own Practice; for they were of late Years, remarkably poor, and always as remarkably honest, even to a Proverb: for, As bonest as Goodman An-

DREWS, was a Bye word.

Well then, said I, comes my late dear good Lady, and takes a Fancy to me, and said, she would be the Making of me, if I was a good Girl; and she put me to sing, to dance, to play on the Spinnet, in order to divert her melancholy Hours; and also taught me all manner of sine Needle-work; but still this was her Lesson, My good Pamela, be virtuous and keep the Men at a distance: Well, so I was, I hope, and so I did; and yet, tho' I say it, they all loved me, and respected me; and would do any-thing for me, as if I was a Gentlewoman.

But, then, what comes next?—Why, it pleased God to take my good Lady; and then comes my Master: And what says he?—Why, in effect, it is,

Be not virtuous, Pamela.

So here I have liv'd about fixteen Years in Virtue and Reputation; and all at once, when I come to know what is Good, and what is Evil, I must renounce all the Good, all the whole fixteen Years Innocence, which next to God's Grace, I ow'd chiefly to my Parents, and my Lady's good Lessons and Example; and choose the Evil; and so, in a Moment's time, become the vilest of Creatures! And all this, for what, I pray? Why, truly, for a Pair of Diamond Ear-rings, a Necklace, and a Diamond Ring for my Finger; which would not become me: For a sew paltry fine Cloaths, which, when I wore them, would make but my former.

Poverty more ridiculous to every-body that saw me; especially when they knew the base Terms I wore them upon. But, indeed, I was to have a great Parcel of Guineas beside; I forget how many; for, had there been ten times more, they would have been not so much to me, as the honest Six Guineas you trick'd me out of, Mrs. Jewkes.

Well, forfooth! but then I was to have I know not how many Pounds a Year for my Life; and my poor Father (there was the Jest of it!) was to be the Manager for the abandon'd Prostitute his Daughter: And then (there was the Jest again!) my kind forgiving, virtuous Master, would pardon me all my Misseeds!

Yes, thank him for nothing, truly. And what, pray, are all these violent Misdeeds?—Why, they are for daring to adhere to the good Lessons that were taught me; and not learning a new one, that would have reversed all my former: For not being contented when I was run away with, in order to be ruin'd; but contriving, if my poor Wits had been able, to get out of Danger, and preserve myself honest.

Then was he once jealous of poor John, tho' he knew John was his own Creature, and helped to deceive me.

Then was he outrageous against poor Parson Williams! and him has this good, merciful Master, thrown into Gaol; and for what? Why, truly, for that, being a Divine, and a good Man, he had the Fear of God before his Eyes, and was willing to forego all his Expectations of Interest, and assist an oppressed poor Creature.

But, to be fure, I must be forward, bold, saucy, and what not? to dare to run away from certain Ruin, and to strive to escape from an unjust Confinement; and I must be married to the Parson, nothing so sure!

N 3

So, Mrs. Jewkes, said I, here is my History in brief. And I am a very unhappy young Creature, to be sure!—And why am I so?—Why because my Master sees something in my Person that takes his present Fancy; and because I would not be undone.—Why, therefore, to choose, I must, and I shall be undone!—And this is all the Reason that

can be given!

She heard me run on all this time, while I was undressing, without any Interruption; and I said, Well, I must go to the two Closets, ever since an Affair of the Closet at the other House, tho' he is so far off. And I have a good mind to wake this poor Maid. No, don't, said she, I charge you. I am very angry with her, and she'll get no Harm there; and if she wakes, she may come to-bed well enough, as long as there is a Candle in the Chimney.

So I looked into the Closet, and kneeled down in my own, as I used to do, to say my Prayers, and this with my Under-cloaths in my Hand, all undress'd; and passed by the poor sleeping Wench, as I thought, in my Return. But, Oh! little did I think, it was my wicked, wicked Master, in a Gown and Petticoat of hers, and her Apron over his Face and Shoulders. What Meanness will not Lucifer make his Votaries stoop to, to gain their abominable Ends!

Mrs. Fewkes, by this time, was got to-bed, on the farther Side, as she used to be; and, to make room for the Maid, when she should awake, I got into Bed, and lay close to her. And I said, Where are the Keys? tho', said I, I am not so much asraid To-night. Here, said the wicked Woman, put your Arm under mine, and you shall find them about my Wrist, as they used to be. So I did, and the abominable Designer held my Hand with her Right-hand,

as my Right-arm was under her Left.

In less than a Quarter of an Hour, I faid, There's poor Nan awake; I hear her ffir. Let us go to fleep, faid she, and not mind her: She'll come tobed, when she's quite awake. Poor Soul! said I, I'll warrant she will have the Head-ach finely Tomorrow for this! Be filent, faid she, and go to sleep; you keep me awake; and I never found you in fo talkative a Humour in my Life. Don't chide me, faid I; I will but fay one thing more: Do you think Nan could hear me talk of my Master's Offers? No, no, faid she; she was dead asleep. I'm glad of that, faid I; because I would not expose my Master to his common Servants; and I knew you were no Stranger to his fine Articles. Said she, I think they were fine Articles, and you were bewitch'd you did not close with them: But let us go to sleep. So I was filent; and the pretended Nan, (O wicked, base, villainous Defigner! what a Plot, what an unexpected Plot was this!) feem'd to be awaking; and Mrs. Jewkes, abhorred Creature! faid, Come, Nan!what are you awake at last? Pr'ythee come to bed; for Mrs. Pamela is in a talking Fit, and won't go to fleep one while.

At that, the pretended She came to the Bed-fide; and, fitting down in a Chair, where the Curtain hid her, began to undress. Said I, Poor Mrs. Anne, I warrant your Head akes most fadly! How do you do?—She answer'd not a Word. Said the super-latively wicked Woman, You know I have ordered

N 4

272 P A M E L A; Or,

her not to answer you. And this Plot to be sure, was laid when she gave her these Orders, the Night before.

I heard her, as I thought, breathe all quick and short: indeed, said I, Mrs. Jewkes, the poor Maid is not well. What ails you, Mrs. Anne? And still no Answer was made.

But, I tremble to relate it! the pretended She came into Bed, but trembled like an Aspen-leas; and I, poor Fool that I was! pitied her much—But well might the barbarous Deceiver tremble at his

vile Dissimulation, and base Designs.

What Words shall I find, my dear Mother (for my Father should not see this shocking Part), to describe the rest, and my Confusion, when the guilty Wretch took my Lest Arm, and laid it under his Neck, and the vile procures held my Right; and

then he clasp'd me round the Waist!

Said I, Is the Wench mad! Why, how now, Confidence? thinking still it had been Nan. But he kissed me with frightful Vehemence; and then his Voice broke upon me like a Clap of Thunder. Now, Pamela, said he, is the dreadful Time of Reckoning come, that I have threaten'd.—I scream'd out in such a manner, as never any-body heard the like. But there was nobody to help me: and both my Hands were secured, as I said. Sure never poor Soul was in such Agonies as I. Wicked Man! said I; wicked abominable Woman! O God! my God! this time! this one time! deliver me from this Distress! or strike me dead this Moment. And then I scream'd again and again.

Says he, One Word with you, Pamela; one Word, hear me but; and hitherto you see I offer nothing to you. Is this nothing, said I, to be in Bed here? To hold my Hands between you? I will hear, if

you

you will instantly leave the Bed, and take this vil-

Said she, (O Disgrace of Womankind!), What you do, Sir do; don't stand dilly dallying. She cannot exclaim worse than she has done: And she'll be

quieter, when she knows the worst.

Silence! faid he to her; I must say one Word to you, Pamela; it is this. You see, now you are in my Power!—You cannot get from me, nor help yourself: Yet have I not offered any-thing amiss to you. But if you resolve not to comply with my Proposals, I will not lose this Opportunity:

If you do, I will yet leave you.

O Sir, said I, leave me, leave me but, and I will do any-thing I ought to do—Swear then to me, said he, that you will accept my Proposals!—and then (for this was all detestable Grimace) he put his Handin my Bosom. With Struggling, Fright, Terror, I fainted away quite, and did not come to myself soon; so that they both from the cold Sweats that I was in, thought me dying.—And I remember no more, than that, when with great Difficulty, they brought me to myself, she was sitting on one side of the Bed, with her Cloaths on; and he on the other with his, and in his Gown and Slippers.

Your poor Pamela cannot answer for the Liberties taken with her in her deplorable State of Death. And when I saw them there, I sat up in my Bed, without any Regard to what Appearance I made, and nothing about my Neck; and he soothing me, with an Aspect of Pity and Concern, I put my Hand to his Mouth, and said, O tell me, yet tell me not, what have I suffer'd in this Distress! And I talked quite wild, and knew not what; for, to be sure, I

was on the point of Distraction ...

He most solemnly, and with a bitter Imprecation, vow'd, that he had not offer'd the least Indecency;

No

that he was frighten'd at the terrible Manner I was taken with the Fit: That he should desist from his Attempt; and begg'd but to see me easy and quiet, and he would leave me directly, and go to his own Bed. O then, said I, take with you this most wicked Woman, this vile Mrs. Jewkes, as an Earnest, that I may believe you.

And will you, Sir, faid the wicked Wretch, for a Fit or two, give up such an Opportunity as this?

—I thought you had known the Sex better.—She is

now, you fee, quite well again!

This I heard; more she might say; but I fainted away once more, at these Words, and at his classing his Arms about me again. And, when I came a little to myself, I saw him sit there, and the Maid Nan, holding a Smelling-bottle to my Nose, and no

Mrs. Jewkes.

He faid, taking my Hand, now will I vow to you, my dear Pamela, that I will leave you the Moment I fee you better, and pacify'd. Here's Nan knows, and will tell you, my Concern for you. I vow to God, I have not offer'd any Indecency to you: And, fince I found Mrs. Fewkes so offensive to you, I have fent her to the Maid's Red, and the Maid shall lie with you To-night. And but promise me, that you will compose yourself; and I will leave you. But, faid I, will not Nan also hold my Hand? And will not she let you come in again to me?-He faid, by Heaven! I will not come in again To-night. Nan, undress yourself, go to-bed, and do all you can to comfort the dear Creature: And now, Pamela, said he give me but your Hand, and fay you forgive me, and I will leave you to your Repose. I held out my trembling Hand, which he vouchfafed to kifs; and I faid, God forgive you, Sir, as you have been just in my Distress; and as you will be just to what you promise! And he withdrew drew, with a Countenance of Remorfe, as I hoped; and the shut the Doors, and at my Request, brought the Keys to-bed.

This, O my dear Parents! was a most dreadful Trial. I tremble still to think of it; and dare not recall all the horrid Circumstances of it. I hope, as he assures me, he was not guilty of Indecency; but have Reason to bless God, who by disabling me in my Faculties, impowered me to preserve my Innocence; and, when all my Strength would have signified nothing, magnified Himself in my Weakness.

I was so weak all Day on Monday, that I could not get out of my Bed. My Master shew'd great Tenderness for me; and I hope he is really forry, and that this will be his last Attempt; but he does not

fay fo neither.

He came in the Morning, as foon as he heard the Door open: And I began to be fearful. He stopp'd short of the Bed, and said, rather than give you Apprehensions, I will come no farther. I said, Your Honour, Sir, and your Mercy, is all I have to beg. He fat himself on the Side of the Bed. and asked kindly, how I did?-begg'd me to be compos'd; faid, I still look'd a little wildly. And I faid, Pray good Sir, let me not fee this infamous Mrs. Jewkes; I doubt I cannot bear her Sight. She shan't come near you all this Day; if you'll promise to compose Yourself. Then, Sir, I will try. He prefied my Hand very tenderly, and went out. What a Change does this shew !- O may it be lasting !- But, alas! he seems only to have alter'd his Method of Proceeding; and retains, L doubt, his wicked Purpose.

On Tuefday, about Ten o'Clock, when my Master heard I was up, he sent for me down into the Par-

lour. As foon as he saw me, he said, Come nearer to me, Pamela. I did so, and he took my Hand, and said, You begin to look well again: I am glad of it. You little Slut, how did you frighten me on Sunday Night!—Sir, said I, pray name not that Night; and, my Eyes overslowed at the Remem-

brance, and I turn'd my Head aside.

Said he, Place some little Considence in me: I know what those charming Eyes mean, and you thall not need to explain yourfelf: For I do affure you, that as foon as I faw you change, and a cold Sweat bedew your pretty Face, and you fainted away, I quitted the Bed, and Mrs. Fewkes did fo too. And I put on my Gown, and she fetch'd her Smelling-bottle, and we both did all we could to restore you; and my Passion for you was all swallowed up in the Concern I had for your Recovery; for I thought I never faw a Fit fo strong and violent in my Life; and fear'd we should not bring you to Life again; for what I saw you in once before, was nothing to it. This, faid he, might be my Folly, and my Unacquaintedness with what Passion your Sex can shew when they are in earnest. But this I repeat to you, that your Mind may be entirely comforted-Whatever I offered to you, was before you fainted away, and that, I am fure was Innocent.

Sir, said I, that was very bad: And it was too plain you had the worse Designs. When, said he, I tell you the Truth in one Instance, you may believe me in the other. I know not, I declare, beyond this lovely Bosom, your Sex: But that I did intend what you call the worst is most certain: and though I would not soo much alarm you now, I could curse my Weakness, and my Folly, which makes me own, that I love you beyond all your Sex, and cannot live without you. But if I am Master of myself, and my own Resolution, I will not attempt to force you to

any-

any-thing again. Sir, faid I, you may eafily keep your Resolution, if you'll send me out of your Way,

to my poor Parents; that is all I beg.

'Tis a Folly to talk of it, faid he. You must not. shall not go! And if I could be affur'd you would not attempt it, you should have better Usage, and your Confinement should be made easier to you. But to what End, Sir, am I to flay? faid I: You yourself seem not sure you can keep your own prefent good Resolutions; and do you think, if I was to stay, when I could get away, and be safe, it would not look, as if either I confided too much in my own Strength, or would tempt my Ruin? And as if I was not in earnest to wish myself safe, and out of Danger?—And then, how long am I to stay? And to what Purpose? And in what Light must I appear to the World? Would not that censure me, altho' I might be innocent? And you will allow, Sir, that, if there be any-thing valuable or exemplary in a good Name, or fair Reputation, one must not despise the World's Censure, if one can avoid it.

Well, said he, I sent not for you on this Account, just now; but for two Reasons: The first is, that you promise me, That for a Fortnight to come you will not offer to go away without my express Consent; and this I expect for your own sake, that I may give you a little more Liberty. And the second is, That you will see and forgive Mrs. Jewkes: She takes on much, and thinks, that, as all her Fault was her Obedience to me, it would be very hard to facrifice her, as she calls it, to your Resentment.

As to the first, Sir, said I, it is a hard Injunction, for the Reasons I have mentioned. And as to the second, considering her vile unwomanly Wickedness, and her Endeavours to instigate you more to ruin me, when your returning Goodness seem'd to have some Compassion upon me, it is still harder.

But,

But, to shew my Obedience to your Commands (for you know my dear Parents, I might as well make a Merit of my Compliance, when my Refusal would stand me in no stead), I will consent to both; and to every-thing else, that you shall be pleased to injoin, which I can do with Innocence.

That's my good Girl! faid he, and kis'd me: This is quite prudent, and shews me, that you don't take insolent Advantage of my Favour for you; and will, perhaps, stand you in more stead than you

are aware of.

So he rung the Bell, and faid, Call down Mrs. Tewkes. She came down, and he took my Hand, and put it into hers; and faid, Mrs. Yewkes, I am obliged to you for all your Diligence and Fidelity to me; but Pamela, I must own, is not; because the Service I employ'd you in was not fo very obliging to her, as I could have wish'd she would have thought it; and you were not to favour her, but obey me. But yet I'll affure you, at the very first Word, she has once oblig'd me, by consenting to be Friends with you; and if the gives me no great Cause, I shall not, perhaps, put you on such disagreeable Service again.-Now, therefore, be you once more Bed-fellows and Board-fellows, as I may fay, for some Days longer; and see that Pamela fends no Letters, nor Messages, out of the House, nor keeps a Correspondence unknown to me, especially with that Williams; and, as for the rest, shew the dear Girl all the Respect that is due to one I must love, if she will deserve it, as I hope she will yet; and let her be under no unnecessary or harsh Restraints. But your watchful Care is not, however, to cease: And remember, that you are not to disoblige me, to oblige her; and that I will not, cannot, yet part with her.

. Mrs. Fewkes look'd very fullen, and as if the would be glad still to do me a good Turn, if it lay in her Power.

I took Courage, then to drop a Word or two for poor Mr. Williams; but he was angry with me for it, and faid he could not endure to hear his Name in my Mouth; fo I was forced to have done. for that Time.

All this Time my Papers, that I had bury'd under the Rose-bush, lay there still; and I begg'd for Leave to fend a Letter to you. So I should, he faid, if he might read it first. But this did not answer my Delign; and yet I would have sent you fuch a Letter as he might fee, if I had been fure my Danger was over. But that I cannot; for he now feems to take another Method, and what I am more afraid of, because, may-be, he may watch an Opportunity, and join Force with it, on Occasion, when I am least prepar'd: For now he seems to abound with Kindness, and talks of Love without Referve, and makes nothing of allowing himself in the Liberty of kiffing me, which he calls innocent; but which I do not like, and especially in the Manner he does it; but for a Master to do it at all to a Servant, has Meaning too much in it, not to alarm an honest Body.

WEDNESDAY Morning.

Find I am watched and suspected still very close; and I wish I was with you; but that must not be, it seems, this Fortnight. I don't like this Fortnight, and it will be a tedious and a dangerous one to me, I doubt.

My Master just now sent for me down to take a Walk with him in the Garden; But I like him not at all, nor his Ways; for he would have, all the

Way,

Way, his Arm about my Waist, and said Abundance of fond Things to me, enough to make me proud. if his Defign had not been apparent. After walking about, he led me into a little Alcove, on the farther Part of the Garden; and really made me afraid of myfelf; for he began to be very teazing, and made me fit on his Knee; and was so often kissing me, that I faid, Sir, I don't like to be here at all, I affure you. Indeed you make me afraid!—And what made me the more fo, was what he once faid to Mrs. Tewkes, and did not think I heard him, and which, tho' always uppermost with me, I did not mention before, because I did not know how to: bring it in, in my Writing.

She, I suppose, had been encouraging him in his Wickedness; for it was before the last dreadful

Trial; and I only heard what he answered.

Said he, I will try once more; but I have begun wrong: For I fee Terror does but add to her Frost: but the is a charming Girl, and may be thaw'd by Kindness; and I should have melted her by Love,

instead of freezing her by Fear.

Is he not a wicked fad Man for this? - To be fure, I blush while I write it. But I trust, that that God, who has delivered me from the Paw of the Lion and the Bear, that is, his and Mrs. Fewkes's Violences, will foon deliver me from this Philistine, myself, that I may not defy the Commands of the

Living God!

STEELS FOR

But, as I was faying, this Expression coming into my Thoughts, I was of Opinion, I could not be too much on my Guard, at all Times; more especially when he took such Liberties: For he professed Honour all the Time with his Mouth, while his Actions did not correspond. I begg'd and pray'd he would let me go: And had I not appear'd quite in Jayan Shiew of wit and a regardless regardless of all he faid, and resolved not to stay, if I could help it, I know not how far he would have proceeded: For I was forced to fall down upon my Knees.

At last he walk'd out with me, still bragging of his Honour and his Love. Yes, yes, Sir, said I, your Honour is to destroy mine; and your Love is to ruin me, I see it too plainly. But indeed I will not walk with you, Sir, said I, any more, Do you know, said he, whom you talk to, and where you are?

You may believe I had Reason to think him not so decent as he should be; for I said, as to where I am, Sir, I know it too well, and that I have no Creature to befriend me: And, as to whom I talk to, Sir, let me ask you, what you would have me answer?

Why tell me, said he, What Answer you would make? It will only make you angry, said I; and so I shall fare worse, if possible. I won't be angry, said he. Why then, Sir, said I, you cannot be my late good Lady's Son; for she lov'd me, and taught me Virtue. You cannot then be my Master; for no Master demeans himself so to his poor Servants.

He put his Arm round me, and his other Hand on my Neck; which made me more angry, and bold; and he faid, what then am I? Why, faid I (struggling from him, and in a great Passion), to be sure you are Lucifer himself, in the Shape, of my Master, or you could not use me thus. These are too great Liberties, said he, in Anger; and I desire that you will not repeat them, for your own sake: For if you have no Decency towards me, I'll have none towards you.

I was running from him; and he faid, Come back, when I bid you.—So, knowing every Place was alike dangerous to me, and I had nobody to run to.

I came

I came back, at his Call; and feeing him look difpleated, I held my Hands together, and wept, and faid, Pray, Sir, forgive me. No, faid he, rather fay, Pray, Lucifer, forgive me: And now, fince you take me for the Devil, how can you expect any Good from me?—How, rather, can you expect any thing but the worst Treatment from me?— You have given me a Character, Pamela; and blame me not, that I act up to it.

Sir, faid I, let me beg you to forgive me: I am really forry for my Boldness; but indeed you don't use me like a Gentleman; and how can I express my Resentment, if I mince the Matter, while you

are fo indecent?

Precise Fool! said he, what Indecencies have I offer'd you?—I was bewitch'd I had not gone thro' my Purpose last Sunday Night; and then your licentious Tongue had not given the worst Name to little puny Freedoms, that shew my Love and my Folly at the same time. But, be gone, said he, taking my Hand, and tossing it from him, and learn another Conduct and more Wit; and I will lay aside my soolish Regard for you, and affert myself. Be gone,

faid he, again, with a haughty Air.

Indeed, Sir, said I, I cannot go, till you pardon me, which I beg on my bended Knees. I am truly forry for my Boldness.—But I see how you go on: You creep by little and little upon me; and now soothe me, and now threaten me; and if I saould forbear to shew my Resentment, when you offer Incivilities to me, would not that be to be lost by Degrees? Would it not shew, that I could bear anything from you, if I did not express all the Indignation I could express, at the first Approaches you make to what I dread? And have you not as good as avow'd my Ruin?—And have you once made me hope you will quit your Purposes against me?

How then, Sir, can I act, but by shewing my Abhorrence of every Step that makes towards my Undoing? And what is left me but Words?—And can these Words be other than such strong ones, as shall shew the Detestation, which, from the Bottom of my Heart, I have for every Attempt upon my Vir-

tue? Judge for me, Sir, and pardon me.

Pardon you! said he, what! when you don't repent?—When you have the Boldness to justify yourself in your Fault; Why don't you say, you never will again offend me? I will endeavour, Sir, said I, always to preserve that Decency towards you which becomes me. But really, Sir, I must beg your Excuse for saying, That when you forget what belongs to Decency in your Actions, and when Words are all that are left me, to shew my Resentment of such Actions, I will not promise to forbear the strongest Expressions that my distressed Mind shall suggest to me; nor shall your angriest Frowns deter me, when my Honesty is in question.

What, then, said he, do you beg Pardon for? Where is the Promise of Amendment, for which I should forgive you? Indeed, Sir, said I, I own that must absolutely depend on your Usage of me: For I will bear any-thing you can instict upon me with Patience, even to the laying down of my Life, to shew my Obedience to you in other Cases; but I cannot be patient, I cannot be passive, when my Virtue is at stake!—It would be criminal in me, if

I was.

He said, he never saw such a Fool in his Life! And he walked by the Side of me some Yards, without saying a Word, and seem'd vex'd; and at last, walked in, bidding me attend him in the Garden, after Dinner. So, having a little Time, I went up, and wrote thus far.

WEDNESDAY Night.

IF, my dear Parents, I am not destin'd, more surely than ever, for Ruin, I have now more Comfort before me, than ever I yet knew: And am either nearer my Happiness, or my Misery, than ever I was. God protect me from the latter, if it be his blessed Will! I have now such a Scene to open to you, that I know, will alarm both your Hopes, and your Fears, as it does mine. And this it is:

After my Master had dined, he took a Turn into the Stables, to look at his Studd of Horses; and, when he came in, he open'd the Parlour-door, where Mrs. Fewkes and I fat at Dinner; and, at his Entrance, we both rose up; but he faid, Sit still, sit still, and let me see how you eat your Victuals, Pamela. O, faid Mrs. Jewkes, very poorly, indeed, Sir. No, faid I, pretty well, Sir, considering. None of your Considerings! faid he, Pretty-face; and tapp'd me on the Cheek. I blush'd, but was glad he was fo good-humour'd; but I could not tell how to fit before him, nor to behave myself. So he said, I know, Pamela, you are a nice Carver: My Mother used to say so. My Lady, Sir, said I, was very good to me in every-thing, and would always make me do the Honours of her Table for her, when the was with her few select Friends that she loved. Cut up, faid he, that Chicken. I did fo. Now faid he, and took a Knife and Fork and put a Wing upon my Plate, let me see you eat that. O Sir, said I, I have eat a whole Breast of a Chicken already, and cannot eat so much. But he faid, I must eat it for his fake, and he would teach me to eat heartily: So I did eat it; but was much confused at his so kind and unufual Freedom and Condescension. And, CONESDE! good-lack!

good-lack! you can't imagine how Mrs. Jewkes look'd and star'd, and how respectful she seem'd to me, and call'd me good Madam, I'll assure you?

urging me to take a little Bit of Tart.

My Master took two or three Turns about the Room, musing and thoughtful, as I had never before seen him; and at last he went out, saying, I am going into the Garden: You know, Pamela, what I said to you before Dinner. I rose, and curt'sy'd, saying, I would attend his Honour; and he said, Do, good Girl!

Well, said Mrs. Fewkes, I see how Things will go. O Madam, as she call'd me again, I am sure you are to be our Mistress! And then I know what will become of me. Ah! Mrs. Fewkes, said I, if I can but keep myself virtuous, 'tis the most of my Ambition; and, I hope no Temptation shall make

me otherwise.

Notwithstanding I had no Reason to be pleas'd with his Treatment of me before Dinner, yet I made hafte to attend him; and I found him walking by the Side of that Pond, which for want of Grace, and thro' a finful Despondence, had like to have been so fatal to me, and the Sight of which, ever fince, has been a Trouble and Reproach to me. And it was by the Side of this Pond, and not far from the Place where I had that dreadful Conflict, that my present Hopes, if I am not to be deceiv'd again, began to dawn; which I presume to flatter myself with being a happy Omen for me, as if God Almighty would show your poor finful Daughter, how well I did, to put my Affiance in his Goodness, and not to throw away myself, because my Ruin seem'd inevitable, to my thort fighted Apprehention.

So he was pleased to say, Well, Pamela, I am glad you are come of your own Accord, as I may say: Give me your Hand; I did so; and he look'd at

me very steadily, and pressing my Hand all the time, at last said, I will now talk to you in a serious Manner.

You have a good deal of Wit, a great deal of Penetration, much beyond your Years, and, as I thought, your Opportunities. You are possessed of an open, frank, and generous Mind; and a Person so lovely, that you excel all your Sex, in my Eyes. All these Accomplishments have engag'd my Affections so deeply, that, as I have often faid, I cannot live without you; and I would divide, with all my Soul, my Estate with you, to make you mine upon my own Terms. These you have absolutely rejected; and that, tho' in faucy Terms enough, yet in fuch a manner, as makes me admire you the more. Your pretty Chit-chat to Mrs. Fewkes, the last Sunday Night, so innocent, and so full of beautiful Simplicity, half difarm'd my Resolutions before I approach'd your Bed: And I see you so watchful over your Virtue, that, tho' I hop'd to find it otherwise, I cannot but confess, my Passion for you is increas'd by it. But now, what shall I say farther, Pamela?-I will make you, tho' a Party, my Adviser in this Matter, tho' not, perhaps, my definitive Judge.

You know I am not a very abandon'd Profligate: I have hitherto been guilty of no very enormous or vile Actions. This of feizing you, and confining you thus, may perhaps, be one of the worst, at least to Persons of real Innocence. Had I been utterly given up to my Passions, I should before now, have gratify'd them, and not have shewn that Remorse and Compassion for you, which have repriev'd you, more than once, when absolutely in my Power; and you are as inviolate a Virgin as you were when you came

into my House.

But what can I do? Consider the Pride of my Condition. I cannot endure the Thought of Mar-

riage, even with a Person of equal or superior Degree to myself; and have declined several Proposals of that kind: How then, with the Distance between us in the World's Judgment, can I think of making you my Wise?—Yet I must have you; I cannot bear the Thoughts of any other Man supplanting me in your Affections: And the very Apprehension of that has made me hate the Name of Williams, and use him in a Manner unworthy of my Temper.

Now, Pamela, judge for me; and, fince I have told you, thus candidly, my Mind, and I fee yours is big with some important Meaning, by your Eyes, your Blushes, and that sweet Confusion which I behold struggling in your Bosom, tell me, with like Openness and Candour, what you think I ought to

do, and what you would have me do .-

It is impossible for me to express the Agitations of my Mind, on this unexpected Declaration, fo contrary to his former Behaviour. His Manner too had fomething fo noble, and fo fincere, as I thought, that, alas for me! I found I had need of all my poor Discretion, to ward off the Blow which this Treatment gave to my most guarded Thoughts. I threw myself at his Feet; for I trembled, and could hardly stand: O Sir, faid 1, spare your poor Servant's Confusion! O spare the poor Pamela! - Speak out, faid he, and tell me, when I bid you, What you think I ought to do? I cannot fay what you ought to do, answer'd I: But I only beg you will not ruin me; and, if you think me virtuous, if you think me fincerely honest, let me go to my poor Parents. I will vow to you, that I will never fuffer myself to be engag'd without your Approbation.

Still he insisted upon a more explicit Answer to his Question, of what I thought he ought to do. And I said, As to my poor Thoughts of what you ought

ought to do, I must needs say, that indeed I think you ought to regard the Word's Opinion, and avoid doing any-thing diffraceful to your Birth and Fortune; and, therefore, if you really honour the poor Pamela with your Respect, a little Time, Absence, and the Conversation of worthier Persons of my Sex, will effectually enable you to overcome a Regard fo unworthy your Condition: And this, good Sir, is the best Advice I can offer.

Charming Creature! lovely Pamela! faid he (with an Ardor, that was never before so agreeable to me), this generous Manner is of a Riece with all the rest of your Conduct. But tell me, still more explicitly,

what you would advise me to, in the Case.

O Sir, faid I, take not Advantage of my Credulity, and these my weak Moments; but were I the first Lady in the Land, instead of the poor abject Pamela, I would, I could tell you. But I can fay no more-

O my dear Father and Mother! now I know you will indeed be concern'd for me; -for now I am for my-felf .- And now I begin to be afraid, I know too well the Reason, why all his hard Trials of me, and my black Apprehensions, would not let me hate him.

But be affur'd still, by God's Grace, that I shall do nothing unworthy of your Pamela; and if I find, that he is still capable of deceiving me, and that this Conduct is only put on to delude me more, I shall think nothing in this World fo vile, and fo odious; and nothing, if he be not the worst of his Kind (as he says, and, I hope, he is not), so desperately guileful as the Heart of Man.

He generously said, I will spare your Confusion, Pamela. But I hope I may promife myself, that you can love me preferably to any other Man; and that no one in the World has had any Share in your

Affections;

Affections; for I am very jealous of what I love, and if I thought you had a secret Whispering in your Soul, that had not yet come up to a Wish, for any other Man breathing, I should not forgive myself to persist in my Affection for you; nor you, if you did not frankly acquaint me with it.

As I still continued on my Knees, on the Grass Border by the Pond-side, he sat himself down on the Grass by me, and took me in his Arms: Why he-sitates my Pamela? said he.—Can you not answer me with Truth, as I wish! If you cannot, speak, and I

will forgive you.

O good Sir, faid I, it is not that; indeed it is not: But a frightful Word or two that you faid to Mrs. Jewkes, when you thought I was not in hearing, comes cross my Mind; and makes me dread that I am in more Danger than ever I was in

my Life.

You have never found me a common Lyar, said he (too fearful and foolish Pamela!); nor will I answer how long I may hold in my present Mind; for my Pride struggles hard within me, I'll assure you; and if you doubt me, I have no Obligation to your Considence or Opinion. But, at present, I am really sincere in what I say: And I expect you will he so too; and answer directly my Question.

I find, Sir, said I, I know not myself; and your Question is of such a Nature, that I only want to tell you what I heard, and to have your kind Answer to it; or else, what I have to say to your Question, may pave the Way to my Ruin, and shew a Weakness

that I did not believe was in me.

Well, said he, you may say what you have overheard; for in not answering me directly, you put my Soul upon the Rack; and half the Trouble I have Vol. I. O had had with you would have brought to my Arms one

of the finest Ladies in England.

O Sir, said I, my Virtue is as dear to me, as if I was of the highest Quality; and my Doubts (for which you know I have had too much Reason) have made me troublesome. But now, Sir, I will tell you what I heard, which has given me great Uneasiness.

You talked to Mrs. Jewkes of having begun wrong with me, in trying to subdue me with Terror, and of Frost, and such-like;—you remember it well:—And that you would, for the future, change your Conduct and try to melt me, that was your Word,

by Kindness.

I fear not, Sir, the Grace of God supporting me, that any Acts of Kindness would make me forget what I owe to my Virtue; but, Sir, I may, I find, be made more miserable by such Acts, than by Terror; because my Nature is too frank and open to make me wish to be ungrateful: And if I should be taught a Lesson I never yet learnt, with what Regret should I descend to the Grave, to think that I could not hate my Undoer: And that, at the last great Day, I must stand up as an Accuser of the poor unhappy Soul, that I could wish it in my Power to save!

Exalted Girl! said he, what a Thought is that!— Why, now, Pamela, you excel yoursels! You have given me a Hint that will hold me long. But, sweet Creature, said he, tell me what is this Lesson, which you never yet learnt, and which you are so assaid of learning?

If, Sir, faid I, you will again generously spare my Confusion, I need not speak it: But this I will say, in answer to the Question you seem most solicitous about, That I know not the Man breathing that I

would

would wish to be married to, or that ever I thought of with such an Idea. I had brought my Mind so to love Poverty, that I hoped for nothing but to return to the best, tho' the poorest, of Parents; and to employ myself in serving God, and comforting them; and you know not, Sir, how you disappointed those Hopes, and my proposed honest Pleasures, when you sent me hither.

Well then, said he, I may promise myself, that neither the Parson, nor any other Man, is any the least secret Motive to your stedfast Refusal of my Offers? Indeed, Sir, said I, you may; and, as you was pleased to ask, I answer, that I have not the least Shadow of a Wish, or Thought for any Man

living.

But, said he (for I am soolishly jealous, and yet it shews my Fondness for you), have you not encouraged Williams to think you will have him? Indeed, Sir, said I, I have not; but the very contrary. And would you not have had him, said he, if you had got away by his Means? I had resolved, Sir, said I, in my Mind, otherwise; and he knew it; and the poor Man—I charge you, said he, say not a Word in his Favour! You will excite a Whirlwind in my Soul, if you name him with Kindness; and then you'll be borne away with the Tempest.

Sir, said I, I have done!—Nay, said he, but do not have done, let me know the Whole. If you have any Regard for him, speak out; for it would End fearfully for you, for me, and for him, if I found, that you disguis'd any Secret of your Soul from me, in this

nice Particular.

I

Sir, faid I, if I have ever given you Cause to think me sincere—Say then, said he, interrupting me with great Vehemence, and taking both my Hands between his, Say, that you now, in the Presence of O 2 God.

God, declare, that you have not any the most hidden

Regard for Williams, or any other Man.

Sir, said I, I do. As God shall bless me, and preserve my Innocence, I have not. Well, said he, I will believe you, Pamela; and in time, perhaps, I may better bear that Man's Name. And, if I am convinc'd that you are not preposses'd, my Vanity makes me assur'd, that I need not to fear a Place in your Esteem, equal, if not preserable, to any Man in England. But yet it stings my Pride to the Quick, that you was so easily brought, and at such a short Acquaintance, to run away with that College Novice!

O good Sir, said I, may I be heard one Thing? And tho' I bring upon me your highest Indignation, I will tell you, perhaps the unnecessary and im-

prudent, but yet the whole Truth.

My Honesty (I am poor and lowly, and am not intitled to call it Honour) was in Danger. I faw no Means of securing myself from your avow'd Attempts. You had shew'd you would not slick at little Matters; and what, Sir, could any-body have thought of my Sincerity, in preferring that to all other Confiderations, if I had not escaped from these Dangers, if I could have found any way for it?-I am not going to fay any-thing for him; but, indeed, indeed, Sir, I was the Cause of putting him upon affifting me in my Escape. I got him to acquaint me, what Gentry there were in the Neighbourhood, that I might fly to; and prevailed upon him-Don't frown at me, good Sir; for I must tell you the whole Truth—to apply to one Lady Jones; to Lady Darnford; and he was to good to apply to Mr. Peters the Minister: But they all refus'd me; and then it was he let me know, that there was no honourable Way but Marriage.

That I declined; and he agreed to affift me for God's Sake.

Now, said he, you are going—I boldly put my Hand before his Mouth, hardly knowing the Liberty I took: Pray, Sir, faid I, don't be angry; I have just done-I would only fay, That rather than have flay'd to be ruin'd, I would have thrown myself upon the poorest Beggar that ever the World saw, if I thought him honest.—And I hope, when you duly weigh all Matters, you will forgive me, and not think me for bold, and so forward, as you have been pleased to call me.

Well, said he, even in this your last Speech, which, let me tell you, shews more your Honesty of Heart than your Prudence, you have not over-much pleas'd me. But I must love you; and that vexes me not a little. But tell me, Pamela; for now the former Question recurs: Since you so much prize your Honour, and your Virtue; fince all Attempts against that are so odious to you; and since I have avowedly made several of these Attempts; do you think it is possible for you to love me preferably to any other of my Sex?

Ah! Sir, faid I, and here my Doubt recurs that you may thus graciously use me, to take Advantage

of my Credulity.

Still perverse and doubting ! said he-Cannot you take me as I am at present? And that, I have told you, is fincere and undefigning, whatever I may be hereafter.

Ah! Sir, replied I, what can I fay? ___ I have already faid too much, if this dreadful Hereafter should take place. Don't bid me say how well I can—And then, my Face glowing as the Fire, I, all abash'd, lean'd upon his Shoulder, to hide my Confusion, which the constitution of the all He

He clasp'd me to him with great Ardor, and said, Hide your dear Face in my Bosom, my beloved Pamela; your innocent Freedoms charm me!—But then say, How well—what?

If you will be good, faid I, to your poor Servant, and spare her, I cannot say too much! But if not, I

am doubly undone !- Undone indeed!

Said he, I hope my present Temper will hold; for I tell you frankly, that I have known in this agreeable Hour, more sincere Pleasure, than I have experienc'd in all the guilty Tumults that my desiring Soul compell'd me into, in the Hopes of possessing you on my own Terms. And, Pamela, you must pray for the Continuance of this Temper; and I hope your Prayers will get the better of my Temptations.

This sweet Goodness overpower'd all my Reserves. I threw myself at his Feet, and embraced his Knees: What Pleasure, Sir, you give me at these gracious Words, is not lent your poor Servant to express!—I shall be too much rewarded for all my Sufferings, if this Goodness hold! God grant it may, for your own Soul's Sake, as well as mine. And Oh! how happy

should I be, if-

He stopt me, and said, But, my dear Girl, what must we do about the World, and the World's Cen-

fure ?- Indeed, I cannot marry!

Now was I again struck all of a Heap. However, foon recollecting myself, Sir, said I, I have not the Presumption to hope such an Honour. If I may be permitted to return in Peace and Sasety to my poor Parents, to pray for you there, it is all I at present request! This, Sir, after all my Apprehensions and Dangers, will be a great Pleasure to me. And, if I know my own poor Heart, I shall wish you happy in a Lady of suitable Degree; and rejoice most sincerely in every Circumstance that shall make for the

the Happiness of my late good Lady's most beloved Son.

Well, faid he, this Conversation, Pamela, is gone farther than I intended it. You need not be afraid, at this Rate, of trusting yourself with me: But it is 1, that ought to be doubtful of myfelf, when I am with you. - But, before I fay any-thing farther on this Subject, I will take my proud Heart to Task; and, till then, let every-thing be, as if this Conversation had never pass'd. Only, let me tell you, that the more Confidence you place in me, the more you'll oblige me: But your Doubts will only beget Cause of Doubts. And with this ambiguous Saying, he faluted me with a more formal Manner, if I may fo fay, than before, and lent me his Hand; and fo we walk'd toward the House, Side-by-Side, he seeming very thoughtful and pensive, as if he had already repented him of his Goodness.

What shall I do, what Steps take, if all this be designing!—O the Perplexities of these cruel Doubtings!—To be sure, if he be false, as I may call it, I have gone too far, much too far !- I am ready on the Apprehension of this, to bite my forward Tongue (or rather to beat my more forward Heart, that dictated to that poor Machine), for what I have faid. But fure, at least, he must be sincere for the Time! - He could not be fuch a practifed Dissembler !- If he could, O how desperately wicked is the Heart of Man!-And where could he learn all these barbarous Arts?-If so, it must be native furely to the Sex !- But, filent be my rash Censurings; be hush'd, ye stormy Tumults of my diffurb'd Mind; for have I not a Father who is a Man! - A Man who knows no Guile! who would do no Wrong !- who would not deceive or oppress, to gain a Kingdom!—How then can I think it is mative to the Sex? And I must also hope my good Lady's Son cannot be the worst of Men!—If he is, hard the Lot of the excellent Woman that bore him!—But much harder the Hap of your poor Pamela, who has fallen into such Hands!—But yet I will-trust in God, and hope the best; and so lay down my tired Pen for this Time.

hever pated. Only, ige me tell you, that offered a Confidence you place in one the more you'll oblige met; But your bolotes will only beget Caust of Josephs." And with allow are viceous become, he like

The END of Vol. I.



defiguring! ———O the Perples rice of the le trues

In a signification of the best of the contract of the contr



but Centuings; De nuth'd, se though's actual of months by actual of months by all and the second actual of a day of the second color of the second color with a way color for dealer who well a color with a way color for dealer of opening the second color of the colo

